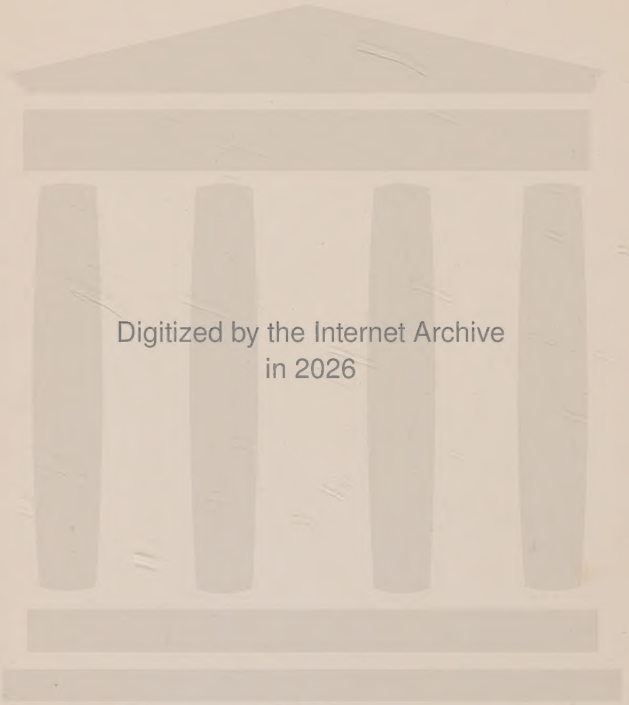
HISTORY OF OKLAHOMA

Mrs. E. J. Curtis.
Grove Okla
March 1911



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2026

https://archive.org/details/historyofoklahom0000jose_v5a7

E. J. Carlock her. Book.
Oklahoma

A HISTORY OF OKLAHOMA

SEQUOYAH, OR GEORGE GUESS

A HISTORY

OF

OKLAHOMA

BY

JOSEPH B. THOBURN

Former Secretary of the Oklahoma Board of Agriculture

AND

ISAAC M. HOLCOMB

Former Superintendent of the Oklahoma City Schools

DOUB & COMPANY

SAN FRANCISCO

1908

All rights reserved

Copyright, 1908
By DOUB & COMPANY

ALLIED PRINTING TRADES UNION LABEL COUNCIL 332

DEDICATION

TO THE YOUTH OF OKLAHOMA, WHOSE BETTERMENT
IS THE INSPIRATION OF THIS STORY, AND UPON
WHOM MUST SOON DEVOLVE THE DUTIES
AND RESPONSIBILITIES OF ITS CITIZEN-
SHIP, THIS VOLUME IS DEDICATED.

PREFATORY

HE purpose of this volume is to place before the student an accurate story of Oklahoma's development, told in simple language. "History is a record of the past." The history of Oklahoma is a record that should bring a feeling of pride to the bosom of every citizen. It is a story we should know. We love best when we know what we love and why. It is our hope that when the story of Oklahoma is told to her citizens, the blood may mount to the cheek, the heart throb more quickly, the eye flash with patriotic fire and love. There is no surer way to bring this about than to teach the youth the magnificent history of our new state. If this little book accomplishes no more, its mission shall have been fulfilled and the authors satisfied.

Oklahoma City, 1908.

ACKNOWLEDGMENT

THE authors desire to thank many friends, not only in Oklahoma but also in other states, for most helpful assistance and co-operation. Without such help some of the data and material for the book would have been difficult, if not impossible, to secure. Especially helpful has been the ready co-operation offered by the officials in charge of the Kansas State Historical Society, of Topeka, the Missouri Historical Society, of St. Louis, and the Oklahoma Historical Society, at Oklahoma City. It would be a pleasure to mention by name all who have contributed to the interest and completeness of the work were it not that the enumeration of so many names would scarcely convey the distinction which is deserved. Their kindness is appreciated, and it is hoped that their helpfulness has been justified by the work of the authors.

CONTENTS

	Page
PREFATORY	v
ACKNOWLEDGMENTS	vi
INTRODUCTORY	1
ABORIGINAL OKLAHOMA	2
THE FIRST PERIOD	
Early Spanish Explorations	11
Coronado's March Across Oklahoma	12
Other Spanish Explorations	16
French Explorers in Oklahoma	19
War Against the Comanche	19
Rivalry of French and Spanish Interests	20
Louisiana Ceded to Spain	23
Louisiana Again a French Province	23
Louisiana Purchased by the United States	23
THE SECOND PERIOD	
The Sparks Red River Expedition	27
Lieutenant Wilkinson's Descent of the Arkansas	27
First Cherokee Migration	28
Establishment of Fort Smith	29
Settlement of Western Boundary Dispute	30
Major Long's Expedition	31
Establishment of Forts Gibson Towson	32
THIRD PERIOD	
Removal of Creek and Choctaw Indians	35
The Santa Fe Trail	36
The Cherokee Unwilling to Move	38
Establishment of the Indian Territory Authorized	40
Boone's Expedition	42
General Leavenworth's Expedition	43
Factions and Feuds Among the Cherokee	47
Voluntary Removal of the Chickasaw	48
Exile of the Cherokee	50

THIRD PERIOD—Continued Page
Operations of the Fur Traders 54
The Overland Trade 55
Captain Boone's Second Expedition 57

FOURTH PERIOD
The Annexation of Texas 61
Across Oklahoma to California 62
The Texas Cession 62
An Overland Trail 63
Exploration of the Red River 63
An Indian Battle 65
The Chickasaw Become Independent 66
Separation of the Creek and Seminole 66
Abandonment of Fort Gibson 67
New Tribal Constitutions 67
The Wichita Dispossessed 68
War with the Comanche 68
Wichita and Other Tribes Colonized on the Washita 70
Van Dorn's Expedition Against the Comanche 71

FIFTH PERIOD
The Beginning of the Civil War in the Indian Territory 75
Retreat of the Federal Troops 76
The Indian Territory a Confederate Military District 77
Confederate Treaties with the Indian Tribes 79
Flight of the Tribes on the Washita 80
Hostilities in the Indian Territory 81
The Loyal Indians Defeated 82
The Battle of Pea Ridge 83
Organization of Union Indian Troops 84
Cherokee Country Invaded by Union Forces 84
The Tonkawa Massacre 85
Second Federal Invasion 85
Re-organization of Cherokee Nation Under Federal Rule 86
General Steele Assigned to Command of Confederate Forces 88
Fight at Webber's Falls 89
Conflicts near Fort Gibson 89
The Perryville Expedition 90
General Maxey in Command of Confederate Forces 91
A Winter Campaign 92
The Battle of Poison Spring 93
Federal Supply Train Captured 94
An Indian Peace Compact 96

FIFTH PERIOD—Continued Page
The Dawn of Peace ... 97
A Peace Council ... 99
Peace Conditions ... 100

SIXTH PERIOD
The Chisholm Trail ... 105
New Treaties Made ... 106
The Coming of Indian Tribes from Kansas ... 108
Return of Refugee Tribes ... 110
War with the Tribes of the Plains ... 111
A Treaty that Lasted Through the Winter ... 112
The Medicine Lodge Treaty ... 113
The Solomon Valley Raid ... 114
The Battle of the Washita ... 116
Progress toward Peace ... 121
The First Railways ... 123
The Okmulgee Constitution ... 124
Satanta's Raid ... 125
Indian Chiefs Visit Washington ... 128
Defeat of the Quahada Comanche ... 129
The Last General Outbreak in Oklahoma ... 132
Death of Pat Hennessey ... 133
A Winter Campaign ... 134
Peace Restored ... 136

SEVENTH PERIOD
The Extermination of the Buffalo ... 141
The Range Cattle Industry ... 144
The Dull Knife Raid ... 146
Proposed Organization of Indian Territory ... 147
The Unassigned Lands ... 147
Proposed Settlement of the Oklahoma Country ... 148
Payne's Oklahoma Colony ... 150
Settlement Prevented ... 152
Meeting of Stockmen ... 154
The Spiechee War ... 155
The Stockmen Organize ... 157
Payne Appeals to Courts ... 159
Death of Payne ... 160
Couch Succeeds Payne ... 162
Couch Arrested ... 164
Threatened Indian Outbreak ... 164
Agitation Against Fencing Oklahoma Lands ... 166

SEVENTH PERIOD—Continued Page
The Last Invasion by the "Boomers" 167
Railway Construction 167
No-Man's-Land 168
The Territory of Cimarron 169
The Oklahoma Question in Congress 170
The Final Contest 172
The Opening Day Proclaimed 173
The Opening of the Oklahoma Country 173
The "Sooners" 174

EIGHTH PERIOD
Negotiations for the Purchase of Indian Lands 177
Attempt to Organize the Territory 179
The Organic Act 180
Territorial Government Installed 181
The Ghost Dance Excitement 182
The First Legislative Assembly 184
Attempt to Remove the Territorial Capital 184
The School Lands 186
Iowa, Sac and Fox and Pottawatomie Reservations Opened to Settlement 187
A. J. Seay Appointed Governor 188
Opening of Cheyenne and Arapaho Country 188
W. C. Renfrow Appointed Governor 189
Settlement of the Cherokee Outlet 189
The Dawes Commission 190
Single and Separate Statehood 191
Opening of the Kickapoo Lands 192
Greer County 192
C. M. Barnes Appointed Governor 194
The Two Territories in the Spanish War 196
Railroad Building Resumed 196
The Curtis Bill 197
The Free Homes Bill 198
Crazy Snake "Uprizing" 199
Discovery of Oil and Gas 201
W. M. Jenkins Appointed Governor 201
Opening of Kiowa-Comanche Country 202
T. B. Ferguson Appointed Governor 203
The Statehood Question in Congress 203
The Sequoyah Constitutional Convention 206
Frank Frantz Appointed Governor 206
Passage and Approval of Enabling Act 207

EIGHTH PERIOD—Continued Page
Election of Delegates to the Constitutional Convention..... 208
The Work of the Constitutional Convention..... 208
Ratification of the Constitution and Election of State Officers 208
The Constitution Approved by the President..... 209
The Constitution 209
Prohibition of the Liquor Traffic..... 210

NINTH PERIOD
The Inauguration of the State Government..... 215
The First Session of the State Legislature..... 215

APPENDIX
Brief Sketches of the History of the Indian Tribes of Oklahoma 219
Indian Troops in the Military Service During the Civil War. 254
Educational Development in Oklahoma..... 256

OKLAHOMA

Land of the mistletoe, smiling in splendor,
Out from the borderland, mystic and old,
Sweet are the memories, precious and tender,
Linked with thy summers of azure and gold.

O, Oklahoma, fair land of my dreaming,
Land of the lover, the loved and the lost:
Cherish thy legends with tragedy teeming,
Legends where love reckoned not of the cost.

Land of Sequoyah, my heart's in they keeping.
O, Tulledega, how can I forget!
Calm are thy vales where the silences sleeping,
Wake into melodies tinged with regret.

Let the deep chorus of life's music throbbing,
Swell to full harmony born of the years;
Or for the loved and lost, tenderly sobbing,
Drop to that cadence that whispers of tears.

Land of the mistletoe, here's to thy glory!
Here's to thy daughters as fair as the dawn!
Here's to thy pioneer sons, in whose story
Valor and love shall live endlessly on!

—*George R. Hall.*

HISTORY OF OKLAHOMA.

CHAPTER I

Introductory

THE story of Oklahoma is full of interest. Unlike most of the older commonwealths of the American Union, the history of Oklahoma does not begin with a single clan or creed. Neither Goth nor Hun, Saxon nor Northman ever invaded its boundaries, yet Oklahoma is a land of many peoples. While, in a certain sense, most of its history is recent, nevertheless, it has much in common with that of other states of the Union. Within its limits live the remnants or descendants of not less than fifty different tribes and nations of Indians, the former homes of whose people were scattered over no less than thirty different states. Likewise, practically every state in the Union is represented by the white people who settled in Oklahoma.

In the makeup of the citizenship of Oklahoma there is blended the blood of the Puritan and the Cavalier, the Patroon and the Covenanter, while many of its people trace descent from the American Indian as well. Oklahoma may claim a part in the history of other states as a matter of right, but she need beg none as a matter of favor. She gives to the world a history of her own that is at once distinctive and romantic.

The history of Oklahoma is unique and remarkable in many ways. Probably never before, since men began to organize governments, was a state of such proportions founded and builded in the same length of time that transpired between the final settlement of Oklahoma and its development into a completed commonwealth, possessing all of the elements of civic greatness. In the short space of a third of a century, within its borders, the savage huntsman gave way to the herdsman, who in turn retired before the husbandman.

The Indian has played an important, though pathetic part in the earlier history of practically every state of the American Union. Only in Oklahoma has his race played such a part in its construction. Thus, there has been woven through the warp of Anglo-Saxon institutions, an element that never before gave distinction to the permanent civilization of a state.

Oklahoma is now one of the states. As already said, much of her history is unique. The real building of the state has covered less than two decades, yet these years have been full. Oklahoma's way must be different from that of other states. She can never be provincial, for her citizenship is a composite of the peoples of every state in the Union. Her past is filled with achievement; her present is laden with opportunity; her future is a challenge to all to rise to the possibilities that await honest effort. Those who carefully study the story of Oklahoma will not only gain a knowledge of its origin and history and of the development of its institutions, but will also acquire a measure of that intelligence and true devotion which are at once the inspiration and power of an ideal citizenship.

CHAPTER II

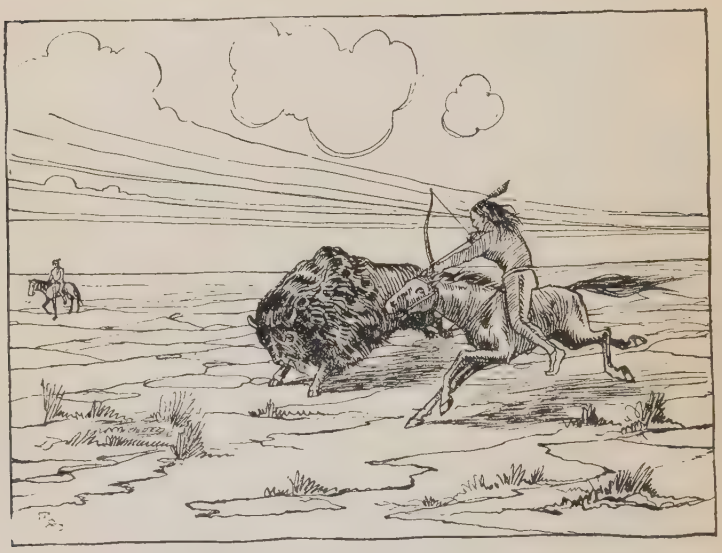
Aboriginal Oklahoma

1.

FIRST Known Inhabitants.—In common with other parts of the American continent, Oklahoma was originally the home of the American Indian. No fewer than ten tribes of aborigines claimed dominion over parts of the state when the white man first came to explore it. Of these, the Osage were found in the northeastern part of the state, from the valley of the Neosho westward across the Arkansas River to the valley of the Cimarron. The Quapaw were found in the valley of the Arkansas below the Neosho, and probably embracing the lower valleys of the two Canadians also. The Caddo were found in the valley of the Red River in the southeastern part of the state. In the western half of the state were found the Wichita, Waco, Tawakony, Kiowa, Comanche, the Apache of the Plains, and several other tribes. Each of these tribes ranged over regions which embraced what are now parts of other states, and in the case of the three last mentioned, they were so entirely nomadic that they never cultivated corn or vegetables.

2. **Food.**—The Indians of the Plains in primeval times depended entirely on the chase. Their very existence depended on the buffalo herds which they followed. The flesh of these animals was used for food; from the skins clothes, moccasins, robes, ropes and tent or lodge covers were made; awls and needles were made of bone; the stomach and entrails were used as vessels for carrying water, especially on the march, in the dry, treeless region. They were skilled

hunters, a stone-pointed arrow sometimes being shot from a bow clear through the body of the buffalo. When a buffalo was killed the hide was cut open at the back and pulled off at the joints, the Indians using a small flint knife, about as big as the finger, apparently with as much ease as if working with a modern steel-blade knife. The flesh of the buffalo was generally eaten raw, though it was sometimes warmed and



INDIAN HUNTING BUFFALO

more rarely cooked over the fire. It was usually preserved for future use by cutting or jerking into thin strips after which it was dried in the sun.

3. **Shelter.**—The lodges or tepees, in which the Indians lived, were constructed of a frame work of poles drawn together at the top like a tripod. This was covered with buffalo skins. In moving their villages or encampments from one place to another these lodges or tents were dismantled and the ends of two poles were fastened to the

collar of a dog (one on each side), the only domestic animal possessed by the Indians. With the other ends of the poles trailing on the ground and a small package of robes, skins, dried meat or other portable possessions secured to the poles behind the dog, that poor brute became in reality a beast of burden, and a most useful one, too. These dogs were half-wild, apparently domesticated wolves.

4. **Weapons of War and the Chase.**—In the chase the Indian hunters used the bow and arrow or the lance. In war they used these weapons and war clubs and stone hatchets as well, with shields or bucklers of stuffed buffalo hide for

LONE WOLF'S CAMP (KIOWA), BUFFALO SKIN LODGES
(From Photograph made in 1872)

protection. The various tribes were often at war with each other. Indeed, if one is to judge from the fact that practically all of the men of each tribe were known as warriors, it would seem that war must have been their chief business of life.

5. **Products.**—The Indians of the tribes inhabiting Eastern Oklahoma, as also the Wichita, Waco and Tawakony, raised corn, beans, pumpkins and melons. The work of preparing the soil, planting the seed and cultivating the crop was left entirely to the women. In doing such work they used rude hoes and spades made of stone and mounted on wooden handles. The Indians of all the tribes in Okla-

homa were more or less adept in the manufacture of baskets. None of them used pottery to any great extent. The Indians of the Great Plains region could easily procure pottery by bartering with their pueblo neighbors in the Rio Grande Valley, but it was doubtless of little use to nomads who were constantly on the move.

6. **The Coming of the Horse and Its Effects.**—Between the time the Spaniards began to explore the region of which Oklahoma is a part, and the first appearance of French and American explorers from the east, the Indians of the Plains became possessed of horses. The result of this acquisition was to greatly change the habits and disposition of the Indians. It greatly widened their field of operations and made possible marauding forays into regions and at distances hitherto out of reach. The buffalo herds were easier to find. The animals were killed with less exertion and the moving of surplus meat and skins and of larger lodges or tepees as well became a matter of much less moment. In time the Indians grew accustomed to estimating their wealth by the number of ponies owned. As the Indians of a given tribe thus roamed over a greater range of territory their opportunities and temptations to become embroiled in more wars were increased. Indeed, horse stealing as well as scalp hunting became one of their ruling passions. The constant warring of these tribes is probably accountable for the meagreness of population, though disease, especially smallpox, had much to do with preventing the increase in aggregate population.

7. **Physical Development and Disposition.**—The warriors of the tribes of the Great Plains exhibited a less perfect muscular development than those of the tribes of the mountains and timbered regions. Their limbs were small and not well shaped, apparently having more sinew than muscle. This was probably on account of their almost constant use of the saddle. They wore their hair long, the scalplock, (i. e., a small portion of the hair growing on the crown of the head), being neatly plaited. The women were usually of

short stature, but much nearer perfect in their muscular development. They were almost uniformly treated as a lower order of beings, only fit to be the drudges and servants of their husbands, the lordly warriors. They performed all of the labor such as cooking, sewing, dressing and tanning the skins of animals, carrying wood and water, taking down, packing and setting up the tepees when the village was moved, herding the ponies and even saddling them at the behest of the head of the family. The men seldom exerted themselves except to hunt or to make war on their enemies. As a rule, they were insolent, vain and boastful, often lacking in both moral and physical courage, crafty, cruel and bloodthirsty, though instances of bravery and generosity were frequent. The women were very industrious, devoted and ingenious. Generally they were of timid disposition. Beauty was not common among them but winsome faces were by no means infrequent. Their hands and feet were well formed and the latter appeared most shapely indeed when encased in neat fitting moccasins.

COMANCHE WARRIOR
(From Painting by Catlin, 1834)

8. **Dress.**—The summer attire of the warriors of the Plains tribes included only a breech clout, moccasins and leggins. In winter they wore a buffalo robe (with the fur

inside) which was wrapped around the body and covered the head. The summer costume of the women included a buckskin skirt, moccasins and leggins, to which a buffalo robe was added in winter. Infants were carried inside the robe on the mother's back.

9. **Adornment.**—The Indians were fond of adornment. Their ornaments, though crudely fashioned, were generally picturesque and sometimes artistic. In their original state they used feathers, porcupine quills and shells; the teeth and claws of animals were also largely employed. After the beginning of their intercourse with the white traders they used ornaments of glass, copper, bronze and silver. They were fond of bright colors and understood the art of extracting pigments from minerals and herbs.

10. **Language.**—Each tribe had its own dialect, though tribes of the same linguistic stock had many words, if not most of their language in common. Their words were few in number and each language had its own peculiarities of grammatical construction. They were much given to the arts of oratory and story telling. Members of tribes which had not a single word in common could readily carry on a conversation by means of the graceful and expressive sign language which was in vogue throughout the Great Plains region from the Rio Grande to and even beyond the Canadian boundary.

11. **Tribes and Bands.**—The subdivision of tribes into bands was largely a matter of personal choice with the individuals. There were only occasional marriages between members of different tribes. Prisoners who were not tortured or killed were adopted and absorbed into the tribe. The nominal ruler of a band was the chief, though the real power was vested in the council of elders and headmen, which sat as the sole arbiter in most matters of policy. The authority of the chiefs was usually that of persuasive influence rather than absolute power. The position of chief was generally, though not always, elective. Some of the tribes had both civil chiefs and war chiefs.

BUFFALO SKIN LODGE, OR TEPEE (CHEYENNE)
(From Photograph made in 1872)

12. **Crimes and Punishments.**—Most crimes had penalties that could be met or satisfied by the payment of a price, usually payable in ponies. Murder was usually punished by a relative or friend of the victim who acted as an executioner.

13. **Traditions.**—Tribal history in the form of myths and traditions was carefully preserved and recited from time to time. Many of the tribes had crude systems of picture writing by means of which great events in tribal history were recorded upon tanned buffalo or deer skins.

KIOWA WARRIOR
(From Painting by Catlin, 1834)

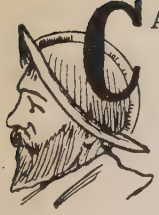
14. **Religion.**—All of the tribes of the Great Plains believed in the Great Spirit, or Creator, and in a future state of existence, which they called the "Happy Hunting Ground." Their "medicine men," so-called, were in reality priests and sorcerers, and what they termed "medicine" meant mystery, sorcery, or supernatural manifestation. Naturally superstitious, they were easily led and influenced by the audacious claims and mysterious incantations of the "medicine man."

FIRST PERIOD
(1541-1803)

CHAPTER III

Spanish and French Explorations

15.



CABEÇA DE VACA.—A force of Spanish adventurers from Cuba numbering four hundred men under the command of Panfilo de Narvaez, in several ships, landed at Apalachee Bay, on the Florida Coast, in 1528. Gold was the object of the expedition—not exploration. Returning from a raid into the interior they found that their ships had disappeared. For a month the party traveled westward along the coast, making slow progress through marshes, swamps and cane-brakes. Then five rude vessels were built and the expedition coasted westward along the shore of the Gulf of Mexico. At the mouth of the Mississppi two of these vessels foundered and many members of the expedition were drowned, in which number was included its commander. The other three vessels reached the coast of Texas. But famine and hostility of the natives rapidly reduced the ranks of the survivors until only four were left. These having been captured by wandering bands of Indians, were led about over the country, traversing Eastern Texas and Western Louisiana, and probably visiting the country of the Caddo Indians. During their wanderings in Texas one of them, Cabeça de Vaca, saw the buffalo herds in the Red River Val-

ley of Northern Texas, being thus the first white man to discover the existence of those animals. They finally made their escape, after wandering westward across Texas into Mexico, arriving at the Spanish settlements in 1536—eight years after the expedition started from Cuba. Alvar Nunez Cabeça de Vaca was the leader of this forlorn remnant.*

16. **Seven Cities of Cibola.**—The hardships which these men had undergone seemed rather to stimulate than discourage further attempts at exploration by the Spaniards. The tales they told whetted the dreams of Spanish avarice. Among the Spanish people there was an ancient legend that when the Moors invaded the Spanish Peninsula, in the eighth century, a bishop of Lisbon had led a large company across the sea of darkness (Atlantic Ocean) to a group of islands where seven cities had been founded. Among one of the Indian tribes, with which Cabeça de Vaca and his companions had sojourned, there was a tradition that their ancestors had once lived in seven caves. The credulity of the romantic Spaniards was such that they quickly connected the two legendary tales. In the firm belief of the existence of seven fabled cities in the country to the north of the region over which De Vaca and his comrades had traveled, in 1539 the Spanish viceroy of Mexico, Antonio de Mendoza, sent an exploring expedition under a monk, Fra Marcos de Nizza. This force penetrated as far north as the seven Pueblos of Zuni, in what is now New Mexico. Meeting with an hostile demonstration by the natives, Fray Marcos and his party retreated. In his report he referred to the "Seven Cities of Cibola."

17. **Coronado.**—The next year (1540) a larger expedition was fitted out for the purpose of conquering the supposed seven cities. The force consisted of 1300 men (300 Span-

*Some authorities maintain that Cabeça de Vaca and his companions passed westward across Oklahoma up the valley of either the Cimarron or one of the Canadians. Others hold that the party reached the Rocky Mountains by ascending the valley of the Arkansas. But the most reasonable presumption would be that the journey across the continent was made nearer the Gulf coast.

iards and 1,000 Indians), and was commanded by Francisco Vasquez de Coronado. Finding that the mud-walled pueblos were not the rich cities which the golden dreams of Spanish imagination had vainly pictured, Coronado turned eastward in his search. During the two years which followed, he crossed and recrossed the Great Plains region to the eastward and northward, and, though he did not find the fabled seven cities, nor did he find any gold, silver or precious stones, he won lasting fame as an explorer. In the course of their journey, Coronado and his followers were the first white men to set foot on the soil of Oklahoma. Coronado spent the winter of 1540-41 on the Rio Grande near the site of Bernalillo, New Mexico, the slender commissary stores of the explorers being supplemented by supplies of Indian corn captured from the pueblo villages of that region. The winter was of unusual severity for that clime, and, of course, added to the hardships experienced by both natives and invaders. An Indian uprising was quelled by stern and merciless force. Then the Indians, mindful of the white man's lust for gold, sought to rid themselves of oppression by means of intrigue, after having failed in the resort to physical force. Among the Indians of the pueblos was a prisoner, or slave, probably captured from one of the tribes of the Great Plains, called the Quivira. By his captors he was induced to tell the Spaniards that Quivira was a land where gold abounded. With such an incentive, the credulous Spaniards needed no urging. Indeed the entire Spanish force was eager to move on this new land of promise.

18. Across the Great Plains.—In April, 1541, Coronado with his entire force started on his march to the north and east. A week after leaving their winter encampment on the Rio Grande, the expedition reached the Pecos River, which was bridged and crossed. Then the little army marched on the Great Plains, which they called Llano Estacado (Staked Plains). Following their Indian guide and proceeding in a general direction toward the east and southeast, the little army of adventurers crossed what is now the Texas Pan-

handle country and entered the western part of what is now Oklahoma. Soon after entering the Great Plains, the Spaniards found immense herds of bison or buffaloes.* Among these herds two tribes of Plains Indians were found. The first of these was known as the Querechos, believed to be the same tribe as that which is now known as the Tonkawa. The

CORONADO'S MARCH ACROSS THE PLAINS

other tribe was known as the Teyas and was probably the same as that which in more recent times has been called Toweeash and which is now known as the Wichita. These Indians informed the Spaniards that Quivira was far to the north. Provisions were growing short, so, after council was held among the officers, it was decided that the main body

*The quaint narrative of the expedition tells of "traversing mighty plains and sandy heaths, smooth and wearisome and bare of wood." Referring to the herds of buffaloes the narrative continued: "All the way the plains are as full of crooked backed oxen as the mountain Serena in Spain is of sheep."

should return to the Rio Grande, while Coronado with thirty picked horsemen, including Captain Jaramillo, the chronicler of the expedition, should push on to the north in search of Quivira.* It is believed that this party passed northward through Western or Northwestern Oklahoma.† They are said to have penetrated as far as the 40th parallel north latitude in Northeastern Kansas. Although Coronado failed

PICTURE OF BUFFALO FROM SPANISH BOOK, 16th CENTURY

to find the "Seven Cities" with their stores of wealth, he was not as luckless as those other adventurers of the same period, DeSoto and Narvaez, who gained not only fame but also graves in the wilderness. Like theirs, however, his expedition was almost barren of results. So far as immedate

*Coronado's line of march in a direction due north passed the salt plain of the Cimarron River.

†The captive Quivira Indian, who was called "the Turk," was taken along in chains and, when he confessed that he had deliberately led the Spaniards out on the dry plains that they might die of starvation and thirst, he was strangled.

benefit or definite geographic knowledge is concerned, the story of his journey might almost as well be a myth.*

19. **Moscoso.**—At the same time that Coronado was pushing his expedition northeastward over the Great Plains, Hernando de Soto was threading the mazes and morasses of the Gulf Coast States toward the northwest, and on the same quest, namely, gold. His greatest discovery was the Mississippi River, in which he was buried. His successor was Lieutenant Don Luis de Moscoso de Alvarado, who, after DeSoto's death, pushed on to the northwest in the hope of reaching the Spanish settlements in Mexico. He passed

THE BLADE OF CAPT. JUAN GALLEGO'S SWORD

nearly, if not entirely, across the present state of Arkansas, and possibly may have crossed the eastern border of what is now the state of Oklahoma in the valley of the Arkansas. This was about the same time that Coronado was searching for Quivira up in Kansas. Failing to find the object of his search in that direction, Moscoso retraced his steps and, with the few survivors of the DeSoto expedition, made his way to Mexico by way of the Gulf Coast.

---

*In 1886 the blade of a double edged Spanish sword was found near the headwaters of the Pawnee River, in Western Kansas. It was partly concealed by the grass roots and much rusted, though part of the original enamel or finish still remained bright. When the rust was removed by scouring it was found that there was an inscription on both sides of the blade, the same being etched in parallel grooves running from the hilt toward the point. They read as follows:

"NO ME SAQUES SIN RAZON;
NO ME ENBAINES SIN HONOR."

Literally translated into English, these inscriptions would read:

"DRAW ME NOT WITHOUT REASON;
SHEATH ME NOT WITHOUT HONOR."

Parts of the name of Juan Gallego appear etched in script near the hilt end of the blade. Juan Gallego was one of Coronado's captains and evidently lost the sword, or it otherwise may have passed into possession of the Indians for a time. The blade (probably of the celebrated Toledo manufacture) is exceedingly hard and very flexible.

20. **Bonilla.**—In 1594 an expedition was fitted out at Santa Fe, under the command of Bonilla, for the purpose of punishing a predatory tribe of Indians on the Plains. Having heard rumors of wealth in the northeast, Bonilla determined to extend his operations to Quivira. The Governor of New Mexico (Oñate) sent a courier from Santa Fe to overtake the force and recall the expedition. But there were neither bridges to burn nor wires to cut in that day, so Bonilla went far out on the Plains in search of Quivira. There, in a quarrel with one of his captains by the name of Humana, Bonilla was killed. Humana assumed command. Later, while encamped on the Plains at a place then called Matanza, the Spanish forces were suddenly beset by thousands of Indians, Humana and nearly all of his men being killed.

21. **Oñate.**—Several years afterward, in 1601, guided by a survivor of the Bonilla expedition, Don Juan de Oñate, Governor of New Mexico, at the head of a force of eighty men, marched in search of Quivira. Oñate espoused the cause of a tribe of Indians known as the Escanjaques,* who were at war with the Indians of Quivira. These allies took exception to the restrictions imposed by the Spanish and turned upon them. One thousand Indians are said to have been killed in the fight, the Spanish loss being very slight. Both Bonilla and Oñate probably passed through one or more of the counties of Northwestern Oklahoma on their way to Quivira.

22. **Spaniards in the Wichita Mountains.**—In 1611 a Spanish expedition was sent east to the Sierra Jumanos (Pawnee) or Wichita Mountains. From that time on until 1629, Padre Juan de Salas and other Spanish missionaries labored among the tribes of that region.

23. **Castillo.**—In 1650 Don Diego del Castillo, at the head of a Spanish military expedition, spent six months in the

*The Escanjaques have been identified as the same tribe which has since been known as the Kansas or Kaw.

vicinity of the Wichita Mountains in a search for minerals.* The Spanish dons were not the last people who wasted time in the effort to find gold and silver in paying quantities in the Wichita mountains.

24. **A British Grant.**—In 1665 the Crown of Great Britain made a grant for the colony of Carolina, embracing all the land from the Atlantic to the Pacific between 30° and 36° 30″ north latitude. This grant included all the lands of Oklahoma except those lying north of the line formed by the westward projection of the southern boundary of Missouri. This was the first that the Anglo-Saxon had to do with Oklahoma, though Oklahoma remained an unknown country to the Anglo-Saxon until a century and a half later.

25. **Marquette.**—Jaques Marquette, a French Jesuit missionary, and Louis Joliet, a Quebec trader, in 1673, descended the Wisconsin River in canoes and entered the Mississippi River, down which they floated as far as the mouth of the Arkansas.

26. **La Salle.**—In 1678 Robert de la Salle secured from the King of France a commission authorizing him to perfect the discovery of the Mississippi, and at the same time granting to him a monopoly of the trade in buffalo skins. The next year, accompanied by Chevalier Henri de Tonti and a strong party of followers, he left Canada for the purpose of carrying out his design. Reaching the vicinity of Peoria, Illinois, in 1679, a military post was built. La Salle returned to Canada, leaving Tonti in command. Returning in 1680 he found the fort in ruins and Tonti and all his men gone. La Salle spent much time in searching for his lost men. Late in 1681 he set forth on his quest of the Mississippi River again. Entering the Chicago River from Lake Michigan, he crossed over the portage to the Illinois River and, on January 13, 1682, he reached the Mississippi, down which he floated to its mouth, where he arrived April 9, 1682.

*It is not recorded that Castillo found either gold or silver. He did find many pearls, however, which he sent to the Governor of New Mexico at Santa Fe.

There he took formal possession, claiming all of the lands drained by that great river and its tributaries in behalf of his sovereign, in whose honor he named the great region Louisiana. This, of course, included all of Oklahoma.

27. **Colonization of Louisiana.**—La Salle returned to France and made preparations to colonize Louisiana. In 1684 he started from France with four ships, equipped and stocked for that purpose. He missed the mouth of the Missippi and landed on the coast of Texas, early in 1685. After two years of fruitless effort to find the Mississippi, he was murdered by mutinous subordinates, and thus ended the first attempt to plant a French colony on the Gulf coast. It was not until 1717 that New Orleans was settled by the French under Bienville. Six years later New Orleans became the seat of the colonial government of Louisiana.

28. **St. Denis, Du Tissenet and LaHarpe.**—In 1714 Juchereau de Saint Denis started to explore Western Louisiana. He ascended the Red River, along the southern boundary of Oklahoma, and from thence crossed over the Plains to the Rio Grande, where he was arrested as an intruder by the Spanish. In 1719 there were two French exploring expeditions west of the Mississippi, both being sent out by Governor Bienville from New Orleans. Lieutenant Du Tissenet ascended the Missouri River, penetrating the domains of the Osage, Kaw and Pawnee Indians in Missouri and Eastern Kansas. The other expedition, under the command of Bernard de la Harpe, started from the post at Natchitoches, on the Red River, to explore the valley of that stream. He visited a tribe of Indians called Nassoni (Caddoan stock, which was subsequently exterminated by hostile tribes). From these Indians he purchased horses. He passed over Southern and Southeastern Oklahoma, meeting the Wichita and Waco tribes of Indians. In 1721 La Harpe attempted to explore the Arkansas River in canoes.

29. **War Against the Comanche.**—During the early part of the eighteenth century, the Comanche Indians, a tribe which roamed over the Great Plains, and which had learned

to use horses in their warfare, constantly harrassed the Spanish settlements in the valley of the Rio Grande. In 1717 a Spanish force of five hundred men was raised at Santa Fe for the purpose of punishing the Comanche. Under the command of Don Juan de Padilla, they marched eastward across the Staked Plain (Texas Panhandle) to a point near the western boundary of Oklahoma, where they found a great Comanche village. Attacking the Comanche at daybreak, a furious battle followed. Hundreds of Comanche were slain and seven hundred were taken prisoners.* Many Spanish captives from the settlements on the Rio Grande were found and rescued. The return of Padilla's victorious force was the occasion of great rejoicing and a general celebration in New Mexico.† The Comanche were so badly humiliated by this crushing defeat that they did not again make war on the Spanish settlements of the Rio Grande for more than fifty years.

30. **French and Spanish Rivalry in the West.**—Although there were as yet few Frenchmen in the Mississippi Valley. and these distant a thousand miles from the Spanish settlements in New Mexico, yet such was the jealousy of the Spanish authorities on the account of the increasing activities

*In those days the Spaniards, like the Indians, wore their hair long but tied at the back of the head. In preparing to charge the Comanche camp they let their hair down and painted their faces red so that they might look like Indians. The dawn of the morning found them close to the Comanche camp, with hundreds of tepees in sight. At a word of command the Spanish forces charged the enemy, shouting the war cry of Santiago as they did so. Many of the Comanche thought it a return of some of their own people from a predatory raid, but they were soon undeceived.

†The seven hundred Comanche prisoners, men, women and children, were sent, under escort of a company of soldiers commanded by Don Pedro Pinto, to the port of Vera Cruz, whence they were shipped to Spain. Upon their arrival they were presented to the Queen of Spain, whose sympathies were touched by their evident distress. By her command, the Comanche captives were sent to Cuba, where lands were given to them and every provision was made for their comfort. But the unhealthfulness of a tropical climate, combined with the hopelessness of broken hearts that pined for the freedom of the Great Plains, soon finished the work of extermination and in a few years there was not one of the Comanche prisoners left to tell the tale.

of the French in exploring the region west of the Mississippi and cultivating the friendship of its Indians, that a force was fitted out at Santa Fe to march against the French in Illinois. Professedly, this force, which consisted of two hundred Spanish, under the command of Villaza, with a large number of Comanche allies, was marching against the Jumanos (Pawnee) and Aijoez (Iowa). If so, they found the object of their quest on the banks of the Missouri where they were surprised by the Indians of those tribes, the commander, his renegade French guide and every member of the expedition except the chaplain being among those killed. The latter, after being held as a prisoner for some months, made his escape and returned alone to New Mexico. This event occurred in 1719.

31. **Du Bourgmont.**—In the spring of 1723, Etienne Venyard du Bourgmont undertook to push farther west through the same region which had been visited by Du Tissenet four years before. He visited the Panis (Pawnee), Kansez (Kaw), Osage and Missouri Indians, and finally, late in the season (October), he succeeded in visiting the Padouca (Comanche) on the Arkansas River in what is now Central Kansas.* Du Bourgmont loaded them with presents in an endeavor to win their attachment to the French. Thus early began a rivalry for political and commercial expansion on the Great Plains region (including Oklahoma) by the zealous colonial representatives of two jealous European monarchs. Strange as it may seem, this rivalry did not end until the flags of both kingdoms had been furled forever on the North American continent. Its final settlement came as one of the results of a war of conquest by a republic whose possible existence was not even dreamed of at that time.

32. **Mallet and La Bruyere.**—In 1739-40 two brothers named Mallet, with four companions, ascended the Missouri

*At that time the warriors of that tribe were mounted on horses, but the burden of moving lodges and other belongings still devolved upon the squaws and dogs. The Padoucas had fine saddles, bridles and other trappings of Spanish manufacture, an evidence of commercial intercourse with (or raids into) Mexican settlements.

to the mouth of the Platte. They then followed the Platte to the Rocky Mountains. Skirting the eastern base of the mountains they went as far south as Santa Fe, New Mexico, where they spent the winter. In the spring the party separated, three members returning overland to the Missouri, while the other three passed down the Arkansas River through Oklahoma, to the Mississippi. The next year, 1741, in an effort to find a shorter route to New Mexico, Fabry de la Bruyere, a French naval officer, with a party of soldiers and Canadians, attempted to ascend the St. Andre River (now known as the Canadian) in canoes, but failed on account of shallow water and sand bars.

33. **The French Indian Policy.**—The policy of the French colonial authorities with reference to the treatment of the Indians was radically different from that which characterized the British colonists on the Atlantic seaboard. The latter uniformly treated the aborigines as an inferior race, and all too frequently both generosity and justice were lacking. The French, on the other hand, sought to win the confidence and good-will of the Indians, largely, it is true, for purely commercial reasons. The result was eminently satisfactory, not alone in the development of the fur trade and allied commercial industries, but also in a political way, for it tended to quiet the age-long strife between hostile tribes by drawing them all into alliance with the subjects of the French monarchy. In no case was the strength of this influence of the French over the Indians more apparent than in the wars between the respective colonies of France and Great Britain.*

34. **Spanish in the Wichitas.**—Brevel, a French Creole trader from Louisiana, visited the Wichita mountains in company with the Caddo Indians in 1760. He reported that the

*There is a tradition among the Osage to the effect that members of their tribe were present and participated in the battle on the Monongahela in which Braddock was defeated in 1755, and that several Kaws arrived shortly after the end of the conflict. While it seems probable that in this instance the Indians have confused Braddock's defeat with the seige of Detroit by the hostile forces under Pontiac, it serves to illustrate the attachment of the various tribes to French interests.

Spaniards were engaged in mining operations in the Wichita Mountains at that time. Spanish priests also still maintained missions among the Indians in that region during this period.

35. **Louisiana Ceded to Spain.**—By a secret treaty, dated November 14, 1763, France ceded Louisiana to Spain, to keep it from falling into the hands of Great Britain as a part of the spoils of the French and Indian War. During the next thirty-seven years Louisiana was officially a Spanish dependency, with a Spanish governor at New Orleans and Spanish commanders and garrisons at other points, but in language, sentiment and traditions it remained French.*

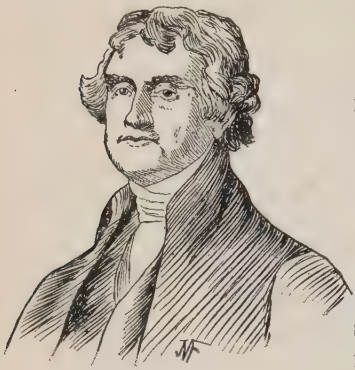
36. **Louisiana Again a French Province.**—By the treaty of San Ildefonso, dated October 1, 1800, between Napoleon Bonaparte, First Consul of the French Republic, and the King of Spain, the latter agreed to give up the ownership of Louisiana to France, the colony or province to be of the same extent that it was when ceded by France to Spain in 1763.† This treaty was confirmed and enforced by the treaty of Madrid, March 21, 1801. Nearly, if not all, of the area of the present state of Oklahoma was included in the Province of Louisiana.

37. **The Louisiana Purchase.**—Scarcely had Louisiana been retroceded to France by Spain when the possibility of its cession to the United States began to be considered. Even before the formalities of delivering its distant outposts to the officers of the French Republic had been observed by the Spanish authorities, President Thomas Jefferson and Robert R. Livingston, United States Minister to France, were actively corresponding with reference to this most important

*French people from the valley of the lower Mississippi and from Canada continued to form new settlements and exploit the Louisiana country even under the Spanish regime.

†The claims of France and Spain overlapped each other in their colonial dominions west of the Mississippi River. France claimed all of the lands drained by the Mississippi and its tributaries. This dispute as to the western limits of the Louisiana Purchase was not finally settled until 1819, when it formed one of the articles of agreement in a treaty betweeen Spain and the United States.

subject.* Bonaparte realized Great Britain's supremacy on the sea and the futility of hoping to hold Louisiana as a French province, in view of its remoteness, and the scarcity of men and means to maintain it against hostile invasion. Moreover, he found it necessary to concentrate every energy in support of the policies and plans of French dominion in Europe. Strong in his feeling of enmity toward Great Britain, he determined to offer Louisiana to the young American Republic in the hope that, by such a course, he would not only put it permanently out of reach of France's ancient enemy, but also insure the growth of a nation on the western continent which some day would be greater even than Great Britain.



THOMAS JEFFERSON

38. Final Negotiations.—On April 12, 1803, Bonaparte instructed his ministers to open negotiations with the representatives of the United States with a view to disposing of the entire Province of Louisiana to that nation. Minister Livingston had previously sounded

*In his interpretation of the Federal Constitution Thomas Jefferson aimed to be consistent, as well as strict; but, as President, he had to face one contingency which the framers of the Constitution had not foreseen. That instrument had been framed and adopted by the people of thirteen states, every one of which was touched by the tides of the Atlantic. The Mississippi Valley was scarcely known, let alone understood, at that time, and the possiblities of its development and, therefore, the strategic importance of the possession of the mouth of that noble river was scarcely dreamed of. One of the greatest acts of Jefferson's careeer as a patriot and a statesman was the calm and courageous determination with which he deliberately violated what seems, even yet, to be the spirit, as well as the letter, of his own political principles and teachings. But posterity has never questioned the wisdom of his action in thus transcending the explicit powers granted to the executive branch of the Federal Government by the Constitution. Indeed, to have acted otherwise would not only have dimmed the lustre of his patriotic achievements, but, in these later days, could scarcely be reconciled to the preamble to the Constitution.

the French Government with reference to the sale of New Orleans and the mouth of the Mississippi. On April 30, 1803, a treaty was signed by and between the duly authorized representatives of the two powers, by the terms of which the Province of Louisiana was ceded to the United States in consideration of the payment of $15,000,000 cash and the assumption of obligations amounting to $3,750,000.* Thus Oklahoma, along with the remainder of the Louisiana Purchase, became permanent territory of the United States.†

Summary.—The period just closed covers the greater part of three centuries. The Frenchman and the Spaniard saw all sides of Oklahoma, but about all they left to the world as a result of their operations is their few, meagre records. Our interest in their explorations lies in the fact that they saw such a country. We are often reminded of them by the names they left on streams and mountains. Their records merely served as a guide for the men who came after. The one great event of the period was the purchase of Louisiana, whereby that vast territory became forever a part of the great American Republic.

*This seems to be a comparatively small price to pay for a great region having an area of 1,160,577 square miles, yet Bonaparte expressed satisfaction at even that compensation for a province of which he had not yet taken possession, and which he might not be able to hold twenty-four hours.

†The United States forces took formal possession of New Orleans on December 20, 1803, and of St. Louis on March 10, 1804.

Questions Concerning the First Period

1. Who was Cabeça de Vaca? What part of Oklahoma did he probably approach in the course of his wanderings? What tribes of Oklahoma Indians did he probably meet?

2. When did Coronado start to search for Quivira? What induced him and his men to undertake such a journey? What part of Oklahoma did Coronado's expedition traverse?

3. What other Spanish explorers visited Oklahoma? In what group of Oklahoma mountains did they search for gold?

4. Who was the first French explorer that visited Oklahoma? What tribes of Indians did he meet in Oklahoma?

5. What tribe of Indians in Western Oklahoma made war on the Spanish settlements in New Mexico? How were they punished in 1717?

6. How far were French colonies in the Mississippi valley from those of Spain in New Mexico? Why were the Spanish jealous of the French?

7. Of what French colony or province was Oklahoma claimed to be a part? What happened to the Province of Louisiana in 1763? When did Louisiana again become a French possession? Who was at the head of the French government at that time?

8. What did the French Consul do with the Province of Louisiana? Who was president of the United States when these negotiations were being considered? How much did the United States pay as the purchase price of the Province of Louisiana?

SECOND PERIOD
(1803-1825)

CHAPTER IV

American Exploration and Military Occupation

39.

THE Sparks Red River Expedition.—May 3, 1806, a force of twenty-four people, including twenty soldiers, under the command of Captain Richards Sparks,* 2d U. S. Infantry, attempted to ascend the Red River in boats on an exploring expedition, it being the intention to visit the country of the Pawnee Pique (Wichita) Indians. Unfortunately, about the time the Sparks party reached that part of the Red River which now forms the southern boundary of Oklahoma, it was met by a large force of Spanish troops under Capt. Francisco Viana, which opposed its further progress and the expedition had to be abandoned.

40. **Lieutenant Wilkinson's Descent of the Arkansas.**—In 1806 Lientenant Zebulon M. Pike, of the United States Army, left St. Louis, Missouri, to explore the regions of the Great Plains and the Rocky Mountains. After visiting the Osage Indians in Missouri and Eastern Kansas, and the Kansas and Pawnee Indians in Northern Kansas, he passed

*Captain Sparks was a veteran of the Revolution and had been an officer in the regular army from the time of its organization in 1791. He reached the grade of colonel in 1812 and died in 1815.

up the valley of the Arkansas River to the Rocky Mountains. Lieutenant Pike planned to explore the sources and course of the Red River on his way back to the states, but was arrested in the mountains of Northern New Mexico by the Spanish authorities and returned to the United States by way of Texas and Louisiana. Lieutenant James B. Wilkinson accompanied Pike on his journey among the Indians of Missouri and Kansas. When the expedition reached the Arkansas River, at a point near where the town of Great Bend now stands, Lieutenant Wilkinson, with five men was detached for the purpose of descending that stream.* The trip down the river, through the present state of Oklahoma, was replete with incident. They arrived safely at the settlements in the lower course of the Arkansas.†

41. Beginning of the Westward Movement of the Cherokee.—In the Autumn of 1808, a delegation of Cherokee Indians from the Southern Appalachian region, visited Washington. One part of this delegation represented the Cherokee people who wished to follow the ways of civilization and to form an organic government. These made known their wish to be set apart from their fellow tribesmen who wished to continue in the old way of living. The rest of the delegation expressed a desire to follow the customs, habits and manners of their forefathers. For this reason and also because of scarcity of game in the Cherokee country, they asked permission to migrate beyond the Mississippi

*Wilkinson's party constructed two small canoes, one by hollowing out a cottonwood log and one by stretching buffalo and elk skins over a frame-work of poles. In these they launched forth, October 28, 1806, the weather being very cold at the time. The boats had to be abandoned on account of shallow water at the end of one day's effort. The party then traveled on foot down the river for several days. Near where Wichita, Kansas, now stands new canoes were built by hollowing out logs. In these the party continued their journey down the river to the settlements in Arkansas.

†It is worthy of note that Lieutenant Wilkinson mentions the falls of the Arkansas (Webber's Falls), which were said to be seven feet high at that time. Thirteen years later Thomas Nuttall, the naturalist, reported the same falls to be three feet high. These falls are said to have entirely disappeared at the time of the great flood in 1833, since which time they have no longer been visible.

River.* After duly considering requests of both parties, President Jefferson replied (January 9, 1809), that the United States Government was friendly to both parties and that as far as possible, it would be glad to comply with the wishes of each. Therefore, those who wished to move to new homes in the West were permitted to send an exploring party to the valleys of the Arkansas and White Rivers in what is now the state of Arkansas. After receiving a favorable report concerning the lands thus explored, some of the Cherokee began to move to the West, and the lands thus selected were confirmed to them by the treaty of December 26, 1817.

42. **Expedition to Salt Plains.**—In 1811 the salt plains of the Cimarron and Salt Fork (Nescatunga) were visited and explored by George C. Sibley, U. S. Indian Agent at Fort Osage, on the Missouri.†

43. **Establishment of Fort Smith.**—In 1817 a military post known as Fort Smith§ was established at Belle Point, at the mouth of the Poteau, on the Arkansas River, and ad-

*A small band of Cherokees who were not reconciled to the triumph of the Colonies in the American Revolution, moved west of the Mississippi in 1785. Another small migration under the leadership of the chief known as The Bowl, occurred in 1795.

†At that period the Osage hunted buffalo in the region of the Salt Plains every year, and it is probable that Agent Sibley was induced to take the trip largely by their representations. George C. Sibley was born in Massachusetts, in 1782. Most of his early life was spent in North Carolina. He entered the Indian service as a clerk at Fort Osage, on the Missouri, in 1807, and was afterward made agent for the Osage. In 1824 he was appointed by President John Quincy Adams a member of the commission to lay out a road to the Mexican frontier and secure the consent of the Indian tribes. Retiring from the Indian service, he settled on a farm near St. Charles, Missouri, where he lived for many years.

§Thus civilization was first planted on the borders of Oklahoma in the guise of military necessity. The site of Fort Smith was selected by Maj. Stephen H. Long of the Topographical Engineers, who had been exploring the valleys of the Kiamitia and the Poteau. The post was named for Col. Thomas A. Smith, of the Rifle Regiment. It was occupied by troops until 1824, when Forts Gibson and Towson were established, and the garrison was withdrawn. It was rebuilt and reoccupied in 1838 and as not finally abandoned until 1871.

joining the eastern boundary of what is now the State of Oklahoma.

44. **Major Bradford's Expedition.**—In 1819, Maj. William Bradford, with a company of the Rifle Regiment, from the garrison at Fort Smith, where he was post commander at the time, marched up the valley of the Poteau, across to the headwaters of the Kiamitia and thence down to the Red River.* His mission was that of expelling intruders. Most of these were renegades or fugitives from justice who had fled from the states or settlements farther east. Major Bradford was accompanied by Thomas Nuttall, the noted botanist. Mr. Nuttall visited the valleys of the Grand (or Neosho), Verdigris, Cimarron and the Deep Fork of the Canadian during that same season.†

45. **Boundary Dispute Settled.**—February 22, 1819, a treaty was agreed to between Spain and the United States, one of the sections of which settled the dispute over the boundary between Mexico and the Louisiana Purchase. Instead of including all of the region drained by the Red and Arkansas Rivers, as had been claimed by France, the channel of the Red River westward from the 94th Meridian to the 100th was accepted. Thence the boundary followed the latter meridian to the Arkansas River and the channel of that stream to the Continental Divide. That part of Oklahoma which is now included in Beaver, Texas and Cimarron counties was thus declared to be a part of the Spanish-Mexican dominions.

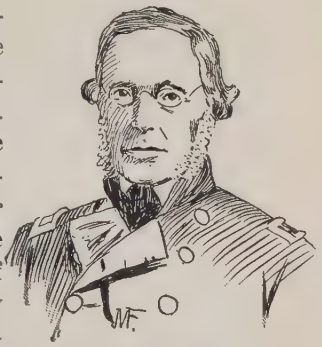
46. **Arkansas Territory Organized.**—March 2, 1819, the Territory of Arkansas was created. When organized, it included nearly all of the region extending from the Missis-

*Buffalo and wild horses were numerous in the valley of the Kiamitia at that time, as also were peccaries, or Mexican wild hogs.

†Nuttall visited a primitive salt making plant on the Verdigris. It was operated by renegade white men. Bougie & Prior had a trading post at the mouth of the Verdigris in 1819. Captain Nathan Prior, the junior member of the firm, was an old frontiersman, having beeen a member of the Lewis and Clark expedition to the Columbia River in 1804-6.

sippi River westward to the 100th meridian between 30° and 36° 30′ of north latitude, except that part which lay to the south of the Red River, thus including nearly all of Oklahoma. At different times between 1819 and 1829, the Territorial Legislative Assembly of Arkansas defined the boundaries of counties in the region which subsequently formed parts of the Cherokee, Choctaw and Creek Nations.

47. **Major Long's Expedition.**.—In 1819-20 an exploring expedition under the command of Major Stephen H. Long,* of the Topographical Engineers, passed up the valley of the Platte River to the Rocky Mountains in Colorado. Skirting the eastern base of the mountains, the expedition then went southward, crossing the valleys of the Arkansas and Cimarron, and entering that of the South Canadian. Believing it to be the source of the Red River, and mindful of the failures of Sparks and Pike, Major Long turned and followed the Canadian and did not learn of his mistake until he had nearly reached its mouth. He entered Oklahoma from the west, just north of the Canadian River, in August, 1820, and left it at Fort Smith, in September. The greater part of his course through Oklahoma was on the divide between the two Canadian Rivers. Believing that he was following the course of the Red River he was naturally very much puzzled that he did not arrive at the Washita, Boggy and other tributaries of that stream.



MAJ. STEPHEN H. LONG

*Stephen H. Long was born at Hopkinton, New Hampshire, December 30, 1784. He graduated at Dartmouth College in 1809 and entered the army as a lieutenant of Engineers in 1814. He was transferred to the Corps of Topographical Engineers in 1816 with the brevet rank of major. From 1817 to 1823 he was constantly engaged in western explorations. He remained in the military service, though often engaged in civil engineering work, and was retired with the rank of colonel in 1863. His death occurred at Alton, Illinois, September 4, 1864.

47a. **Across Oklahoma to the Rocky Mountains.**—In the autumn of 1821, a party of traders and trappers, under the leadership of Capt. Nathan Prior, Hugh Glenn and Jacob Fowler, left Fort Smith, Arkansas, on an expedition to the Rocky Mountains. The first part of their journey was through that part of Oklahoma which lies north of the Arkansas River.

48. **First Mission and School Established.**—The American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions established a mission and school for the Osage Indians. It was situated on the Grand (or Neosho) River, a few miles above the site upon which Cantonment Gibson was built, and was called Union Mission. This event occurred in 1822.

49. **An Indian Territory Proposed.**—In 1824 President Monroe's message to Congress contained a recommendation that a tract of land west of Missouri and Arkansas be set aside for the colonization of Indians from the states east of the Mississippi River. This recommendation was renewed by his successor. It was proposed to establish an Indian Territory. Such a course was urged also by some of the missionaries who were laboring among the Indians. It was urged that the Indians should be settled in a region far removed from the whites and especially where they would not come in contact with certain vicious influences with which they were surrounded on their old reservations in the states east of the Mississippi. Another argument was that these tribes, from long association with the whites were peaceable and that their presence and influence would have a beneficial effect upon the wild tribes, thus minimizing the danger of the horrors of Indian war on the border.

50. **Forts Gibson and Towson Established.**—In April, 1824, Fort Gibson was established by Colonel Matthew Arbuckle,* of the 7th U. S. Infantry. This post was located

*Matthew Arbuckle was born in Greenbrier County, (West) Virginia, in 1776. He entered the United States Army as an ensign in 1799, became a captain in 1806, a major in 1812 and was commissioned as colonel of the 7th U. S. Infantry regiment in 1820. In 1830 he was brevetted brigadier general. He was in command

on the Neosho (or Grand) River a short distance above its mouth.* The next month another military post known as

THE BARRACKS AT FORT GIBSON

Fort Towson, was established in the valley of the Kiamitia a few miles above where it empties into the Red River.†

---

of the military forces stationed in the eastern part of the present state of Oklahoma for nearly twenty years. He died at Fort Smith, Arkansas, June 11, 1851.

*Fort Gibson, which was first known as Cantonment Gibson, was garrisoned almost continuously for nearly seventy years. It was named in honor of Col. George Gibson, who was at that time and for many years afterward at the head of the subsistence department of the U. S. Army. It occupied a beautiful site, was the station of regimental headquarters, was situated near the Cherokee, Creek and Osage Indian agencies and was a center of social as well as official life. Visitors to the Indian country in the olden times never failed to call at Fort Gibson. Many noted men of the last century were guests within the walls of its hospitable quarters. Among these might be mentioned Washington Irving, George Catlin (the painter of Indian portraits), John Howard Payne (the author of "Home, Sweet Home"), and others equally well known. Fort Gibson was the center of great activity during the Civil War, having been a Confederate stronghold during the early part of that conflict, later becoming the center of Union operations in the surrounding region.

†Fort Towson, which was named after Colonel (afterwards General) Nathan Towson, was a smaller post than Fort Gibson. It was occupied as a military post for a period of thirty years, being abandoned in 1854. During the Civil War it was re-occupied as a military post by troops of the Confederate Army.

Questions Concerning the Second Period

1. Who was the first American who attempted to explore Oklahoma? Why did he turn back without completing his mission?

2. Who descended the Arkansas River in 1806? What part of Oklahoma did he pass through in the course of his journey?

3. When and where was Fort Smith established?

4. When and how was the western boundary of Oklahoma determined? What foreign nation claimed the territory that bordered upon Southern and Western Oklahoma at that time?

5. Who explored Oklahoma in 1820? What was his line of march across the state?

6. For what tribe of Indians was the first mission and school established in Oklahoma? When and where was it established and what was it called?

7. When was it first proposed to establish an Indian Territory? By what president?

8. What two military posts were established in Oklahoma in 1824? Where were they located?

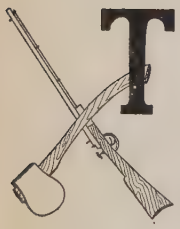
THIRD PERIOD

(1825-1845)

CHAPTER V

Migration and Settlement of Indians From East of the Mississippi

51.



THE First Indian Migrations.—Within the five years following the establishment of Forts Gibson and Towson in 1824, the Cherokee, Choctaw and Creek Indians began to move into the adjacent region from points farther east and south. The Creek Indians, through the medium of their National Council, signed a treaty February 12, 1825, by which they relinquished all of their lands in Georgia, taking in exchange therefor a grant of land lying between the Canadian and Arkansas Rivers in what is now Oklahoma.* This grant was ratified and confirmed by the subsequent treaties of January 24, 1826, and March 24, 1832. Many of the Creeks began moving westward soon after the first of these three treaties was made, and, by the terms of the last treaty, all of the Creeks were to move to their new reservation in the West.

*Some of the Creek Indians, under the leadership of Roly McIntosh, moved across the Mississippi and settled as early as 1819-20,—several years before they were authorized to do so by treaty.

52. **The Santa Fe Trail.**—By Act of Congress approved March 3, 1825, the President of the United States was authorized to cause a road to be marked out from the western frontier of Missouri to the confines of New Mexico and providing that three commissioners should be appointed to select and survey the proposed route and to secure the consent of the Indian tribes occupying the lands through which the road was to be laid out.* Benjamin H. Reeves, George C. Sibley and Thomas Mather were named as commissioners. Acting in that capacity they negotiated treaties with the Great and Little Osage and Kaw Indians and performed the work of locating the proposed road in 1825-6-7. This highway of international commerce across the Great Plains became best known as the Santa Fe Trail. For a distance of about seventy miles this road passed over Oklahoma soil, entering

*As originally laid out, the eastern terminus of the road to New Mexico was at Fort Osage, on the southern bank of the Missouri River about thirty miles below the mouth of the Kansas River. The western terminus was at Taos, New Mexico. A few years later the eastern starting point was changed to Westport (now a part of Kansas City, Missouri), while, right from the start, the western destination was at Santa Fe, New Mexico. This historic highway soon became an important factor in the development of the West and Southwest. From the East, manufactured goods of all kinds were shipped to the trading posts of the Great Plains and Rocky Mountains, as well as to the Mexican settlements in the valleys of the Pecos and Rio Grande. From the West, bales of wool, bars of silver bullion, furs and buffalo hides were hauled to the Missouri River. The large freight wagons, known as Conestoga wagons, were designed and built at Pittsburgh especially for the overland traffic. They were generally drawn by mules or oxen. As a rule, the traders traveled in companies or caravans of considerable number for mutual protection. Indeed, a military escort had to be provided at times on account of danger from raiding Indians of the Plains tribes. Nor was watchfulness against possibility of attack from renegade white men to be discounted. But, if overland freighting trade was attended by danger and risk, its profits were so great that it annually increased in extent and volume until the opening of the first railways across the Great Plains put an end to the usefulness of the wagon trail. Along its dusty paths tramped and camped part of the army which helped to extend the national domain in the war with Mexico. Over its desolate length marched many of the Argonauts, lured to California by tales of gold and dreams of wealth. But the plow of the pioneer long since obliterated most of its traces. Henceforth it will live only in history and legend.

ATTACK ON WAGON TRAIN, SANTA FE TRAIL

what is now Texas county, Oklahoma, from the north and passing, in a generally southwesterly direction, across Cimarron county.

53. Boundaries Surveyed.—The eastern boundary of Oklahoma, from the Red River north to the Arkansas, was surveyed in 1826 in compliance with the provisions of the Choctaw treaty of 1825. From the Arkansas north to the southwest corner of Missouri, it was surveyed in accordance with the terms of the Cherokee treaty of 1828.*

54. The Cherokee Unwilling to Move.—The greater part of the Cherokee people remained in their old homes in Georgia, North Carolina and Tennessee. There they were making fair progress toward civilization, being engaged in farming, stock-raising, trading and other occupations common to their time and location. They had their own schools, and missionaries were fast establishing churches in every settlement. The writing and printing of their language had been made possible by the invention of an alphabet by a Cherokee named Sequoyah.† But, while the Cherokee were progressing in their own way, the white settlements first, came near, then crowded, and, finally, encroached upon the

*All white settlers west of these lines were required to move farther east where they were permitted to select other lands instead of those thus abandoned.

†The Cherokee Phoenix was the name of the first Cherokee newspaper. It was established at New Electa, Tennessee, in 1827, with Elias Boudinot as editor. Its publication continued until 1832. In 1844 it was re-established in Tahlequah, the capital of the new home of the Cherokee in the West, under the name of the Cherokee Advocate, and as such it was continuously published until the outbreak of the Civil War. It was again re-established in 1870. In 1876 the printing plant of the Advocate was destroyed by fire and, when re-established, it was again given a new volume and number. The Advocate was printed half in Cherokee and half in English. It was published by the Cherokee Nation, its editor being selected by the National Council, usually from among the ablest men in the tribe. It was the medium through which all legal notices, proclamations, reports and other public documents reached the citizenship of the little Indian republic and, in addition, much in the way of news and editorial comment that was of pertinent interest. Being a national publication, it was always neutral in all matters pertaining to the partizan political controversies which so often agitated the Cherokee people.

lands of the Cherokee in the mountain fastnesses and fertile valleys. Then gold was discovered among the mountains of the Cherokee country in Northern Georgia, with the result that the cupidity and avarice of the white man was thoroughly aroused. Hostile state legislation followed, for the technical violation of which even the unselfish missionaries were thrust into prison.

55. First Removal Treaty.—The treaty of Washington, May 6, 1828, proposed to settle the entire Cherokee tribe on a new reservation west of Arkansas Territory. This reservation was to consist of 7,000,000 acres, with an outlet to the region of the Great Plains besides.* In addition, the United States government solemnly pledged to guarantee the same to the Cherokee and their children forever.

56. Troubles with Indigenous Tribes.—The Indians of the immigrant tribes had considerable trouble with those of neighboring aboriginal tribes, particularly the Osage, with whom both the Cherokee and Choctaw had several battles or skirmishes. The Government exerted every effort to bring about a better feeling between them, however, and the hostilities between the tribes from the East and those of the West, which ceased shortly after the settlement of the former, were never renewed.†

57. Other Tribes Become Interested.—The westward migration of the earlier Cherokee pioneers could not but be noted by the Creek, Choctaw and Chickasaw Indians. This, together with the increasing settlements of white men, tended to make some of the people of these tribes restless and unsettled, and ultimately led to explorations of the country west of the Mississippi on their own account. October 20, 1820, Generals Andrew Jackson and Thomas Hinds concluded a treaty with the Choctaw, by the terms of which, in return for

*This outlet was the tract which afterwards became known as the Cherokee Strip.

†The last fight between the Cherokee and Osage took place at the Claremore Mound (where the town of Sageeyah was afterwards built) in September, 1828, between the Cherokee, under Tachee, or "Dutch," and the Osage, led by the Chief Claremore, or Clermo.

the cession of certain lands in Mississippi, all of the lands lying between the Canadian and Red Rivers of Arkansas were granted to them as a new reservation.* This grant was confirmed by the successive treaties, one being agreed to at Washington, January 20, 1825, and the other concluded at Dancing Rabbit Creek, September 27, 1830, provided for the movement of the entire tribe to the new reservation west of the Mississippi.† A great many of the Choctaw had moved to Western Arkansas as early as 1824, and others came during the two following years, but the migration of the main body of the tribe did not take place until after the adoption of the Treaty of Dancing Rabbit Creek. It will thus be seen that, though the Cherokee were the first of the Southern tribes to begin to move west of the Mississippi, the Choctaw were the first to receive and accept the grant of a reservation within the geographic limits of the present state of Oklahoma, the Cherokee being located in Arkansas at that time.

58. **Establishment of the Indian Territory Authorized.**— An Act of Congress approved May 26, 1830, made provision for the establishment of the Indian Territory. By the terms of that law the President of the United States was authorized to select a part of the undivided public domain to which the title of the aboriginal tribes had been extinguished, the same to be divided into a suitable number of districts or reservations for the reception of such tribes of Indians as might choose to exchange the lands where they then resided in

*A few Choctaw and Chickasaw families had voluntarily migrated west of the Mississippi as early as 1801.

†This Treaty of Dancing Rabbit Creek had several supplementary articles, among which was one making provision for the pensioning of certain Choctaw Indians who had marched and fought under General Anthony Wayne in his campaign against the hostile tribes in Ohio in 1794-5. Another made provision for personal reservations, or allotments, of land in Mississippi to certain Choctaw Indians who were peculiarly honored or venerated by their fellow tribesmen. Among those thus favored was one named "Oaklahoma," who was to receive an entire section of land. Who was Oaklahoma? What part had he played in the history of his people, and was it in his honor that it was afterwards proposed to name the territory and state which their descendants helped to establish?

states east of the Mississippi. There does not seem to have been any formal action on the part of the President in thus definitely fixing the bounds and limits of the proposed Indian Territory. But, however that may be, the country immediately west of the organized states and territories came to be known as the Indian Territory.* Within fifteen years after the passage and approval of the act providing for the establishment of the Indian Territory, many tribes found their way thither from the states east of the Mississippi, there having been a concerted movement on the part of the Government and the missionaries to encourage such a migration.† The Delaware, Miami, Shawnee, Wyandotte, Ottawa, Kickapoo, Pottawatomie, Sac and Fox, and several smaller tribes, moved to reservations in that part of the so-called Indian Territory from which the state of Kansas was afterward formed. But few of the immigrant tribes from the East were provided with reservations within the limits of the

*In the Annual Register of Indian Affairs within the Indian (or Western) Territory, compiled and published by Rev. Isaac McCoy, January 1, 1835, and printed by Jotham Meeker at the Shawnee Mission in what is now Johnson County, Kansas, appears the following statement as to the location and size of the so called Indian Territory: "By the Indian Territory is meant the country within the following limits, viz: Beginning on the Red River east of the Mexican boundary and as far west of Arkansas Territory as the country is habitable; thence down the Red River eastwardly to Arkansas Territory; thence northwardly along the line of Arkansas Territory to the state line of Missouri; thence along its western line to the Missouri River; thence up the Missouri River to the Puncah River; thence westwardly as far as the country is habitable; thence southwardly to point of beginning." It will thus be seen that the original Indian Territory extended from the valley of the Red River in Southern Oklahoma, to that of the Niobrara River in Northern Nebraska. It was, therefore, approximately six hundred miles long, while the supposed habitable zone (i. e., that upon which there was timber sufficient for building, fuel and fencing) was approximately one hundred and fifty to two hundred miles wide.

†When specific areas or reservations in the West were assigned to tribes from the East, the Government guaranteed to "forever secure to them and their heirs the country so exchanged with them." The Government also paid some of the tribes large sums of money which represented the difference between the value of the lands relinquished in the East and that of the new reservations in the West, and thus most of the trust funds of the several tribes originated.

present state of Nebraska. The eastern parts of Nebraska, Kansas and Oklahoma, with an indeterminate western boundary, were thus known as the Indian Territory until after the passage of the Kansas-Nebraska Bill by Congress in 1854.

59. **Seminole Treaty.**—The Seminole Indians, which were an offshoot of the Creek Nation, were induced to sign a treaty, May 9, 1832, in which they agreed to move west and join their Creek brethren. They did not do so at once, however, and a few years later—in 1836—they were provoked to hostilities, and the war which followed was one of the most disastrous and costly Indian conflicts in which the United States ever became engaged. It was not until 1842 that the Seminole were finally reduced to submission, after which the main body of the tribe migrated to the Indian Territory.

60. **Treaty of Pontotoc.**—October 20, 1832, the Chickasaw Indians, by treaty signed by the general tribal council at the council house on Pontotoc Creek (Mississippi) agreed to sell all of their lands situated in Mississippi and Tennessee.* Pursuant to this agreement, the Chickasaw lands east of the Mississippi were sold to settlers, the Chickasaw Nation receiving the net proceeds of such sales, after deducting cost of surveying and selling.

61. **Captain Boone's Expedition.**—In the autumn of 1832, a company of mounted rangers under the command of Captain Nathan Boone, marched westward from the Osage Agency, above Fort Gibson, crossing the Arkansas River just above the mouth of the Cimarron, forded the latter a few miles below the site of Guthrie, and struck the North Cana-

*The preamble of the Pontotoc Treaty is a pathetic expression of the feelings of the Chickasaw who were loth to leave the ancient haunts and homes of their people. It was as follows: "The Chickasaw Nation find themselves oppressed in their present situation by being made subject to the laws of the states in which they reside. Being ignorant of the language and laws of the white man, they cannot understand or obey them. Rather than submit to this great evil, they prefer to seek a home in the West, where they may live and be governed by their own laws. And, believing that they can procure for themselves a home suited to their wants and condition, provided they had the means to contract and pay for the same, they have determined to sell their country and hunt a new home."

dian at a point about midway between El Reno and Oklahoma City. The expedition then passed southeastward through Cleveland and Pottawatomie counties and from thence made its way back to Fort Gibson.* The same year a party of twelve Santa Fe traders from the United States attempted to return eastward from the Mexican settlements across the Staked Plains in the winter of 1832-3. They were attacked by a large force of Kiowa and Comanche on the Canadian. Two of the traders were killed and the rest escaped at night, abandoning their baggage and nearly ten thousand dollars in silver.† The survivors divided into two parties, one of which, consisting of five men, made its way eastward across Oklahoma to the Creek settlements on the Arkansas, after experiencing terrible privations and suffering.§

WASHINGTON IRVING

62. War Between Osage and Kiowa.—In the spring of 1833 a war party of Osage surprised a camp of Kiowa, consisting of women, children and old men, the warriors being absent, within the present limits of Kiowa County, killing five men and many women and children.

63. Expedition of General Leavenworth to the West.—It was to bring about peace between the Kiowa and Osage and other tribes of the Southwest that, acting under orders of the

*This expedition was accompanied by two civilian tourists of a literary turn, namely, Washington Irving and Charles Joseph Latrobe. Irving embodied his experiences and the observations of his outing in the Oklahoma wilderness in a charming sketch entitled, "A Tour on the Prairies." Latrobe, who was an Englishman, also gave a detailed account of the same journey in his book, "The Rambler in North America in 1832 and 1833."

†This money was buried in the sand, but was undoubtedly found by the Indians, as the Mexican traders afterward found them in possession of a great deal of specie.

§One of the members of the party which reached the Creek settlements was a young man by the name of Albert Pike, who came into prominence in the history of Oklahoma during the Civil War, thirty years later.

War Department, in the summer of 1834, Gen. Henry Leavenworth assumed command of an expedition to the western part of Oklahoma as escort to Ex-Governor Montfort Stokes, of North Carolina, who was a special commissioner for the removal of the eastern tribes of Indians. Governor Stokes wished to meet the Comanche, Pawnee Pict (Wichita), and other wild tribes on the plains, and induce them to enter into treaties with the whites and with the tribes from east of the Mississippi, which were just then settling in the Indian Territory. He was accompanied by Major Francis W. Armstrong, United States Indian Agent, and representatives of the Cherokee, Delaware, Seneca, Osage and other tribes. The troops composing General Leavenworth's command consisted of detachments of the 3d and 7th Regiments of Infantry and the 1st Regiment of Dragoons.

GEORGE CATLIN

64. Route of the Expedition.—The command of General Leavenworth marched from Forts Gibson, Coffee* and Towson, concentrating on the Washita, probably within the limits of Johnston County.† From thence the expedition moved in a northwesterly direction, following the general course of the

*Fort Coffee was established twelve miles above Fort Smith, on the Arkansas River, in June, 1834, and was abandoned in October, 1838. The post was named for Gen. John Coffee, one of the commissioners who negotiated treaties for the removal of several of the southern tribes to the Indian Territory.

†George Catlin, the celebrated painter of Indian portraits, accompanied the expedition and painted a number of portraits and scenes from Indian life in Oklahoma at the time. George Catlin was born at Wilkesbarre, Pennsylvania, July 26, 1796. He studied law, was admitted to the bar and practiced for several years in his early manhood. He had a marked taste for art, however, and, in 1823, he abandoned his law books for the career of a portrait painter. In 1829 he first began to paint Indian portraits and scenes, and then formulated his plans for the preservation of representative scenes and faces of the aboriginal life of America, which he made his life work. He remained in the Indian country almost constantly during the ensuing eight years. In later years he de-

Washita. There was a great deal of sickness among the officers and men of the command, and a temporary hospital camp was established on the Washita. General Leavenworth,* being on the sick list, remained at the camp, which was protected by all of the infantry of the expedition. The Dragoons proceeded, under the command of Col. Henry Dodge, to a point somewhere between the present site of Anadarko and the Wichita Mountains, where a large body of Comanche Indians were visited. From that point the command marched southwestward through the main range of the Wichita Mountains to the village of the Pawnee Pict† (Toyash or Wichita) Indians, which was situated in the valley of the North Fork of the Red River (Mobeetah) in the southern part of what is now Kiowa County.§ At that place many Kiowa Indians came to see the white men. Formal councils were

GEN. HENRY LEAVENWORTH

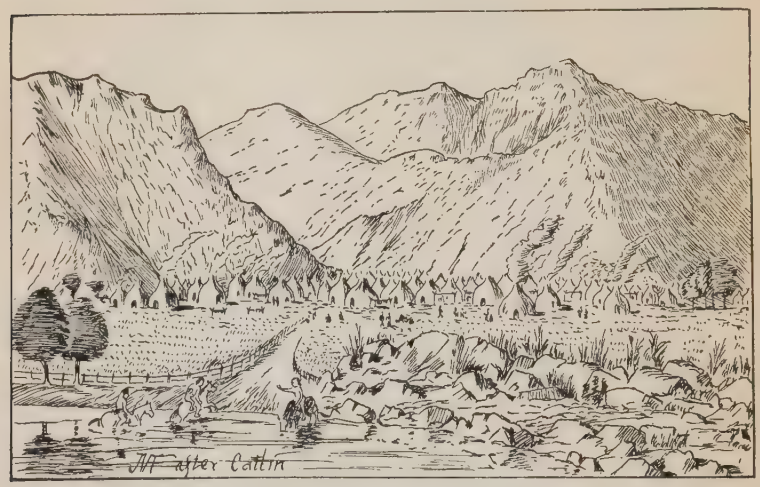
voted himself largely to lecturing on Indians and Indian life, using his paintings to illustrate his lectures. In this work he traveled not only over a large part of the United States, but also visited many of the cities of Great Britain and Continental Europe. He died at Jersey City, New Jersey, December 23, 1872.

*General Henry Leavenworth was born at New Haven, Connecticutt, December 10, 1783, and died in camp in Oklahoma, probably near the present site of Pauls Valley, July 21, 1834. He was a veteran of the War of 1812, and had long served on the frontier in campaigns against hostile Indians. In the course of his service he established several military posts in the West, including Fort Leavenworth, which was named in his honor. This post (established in 1827) is one of the oldest and most important military stations west of the Mississippi.

†The site of the Wichita village was adjacent to the gorge which is known as the Devil's Canyon, a short distance below the mouth of Elm Fork, on the east side of the North Fork. The Wichita claimed that their village had been continuously located upon that site for seventy years prior to the visit of the Dragoons.

§The Pawnee Pict (Wichita) Indians of that time were described as being essentially an agricultural people, having large fields of corn, beans, squashes and melons, and possessing but few weapons and horses such as their more warlike neighbors, the Comanche and Kiowa, owned. They lived in large, dome-shaped, grass-thatched huts.

held with all the tribes* with the result that upon the return of the expedition, representatives of the Comanche, Kiowa, Toyash (Wichita) and Wacoah (Waco) tribes accompanied it to Fort Gibson. Upon invitation of Commissioner Stokes and Agent Armstrong, the neighboring tribes sent representa-



WICHITA VILLAGE, KIOWA COUNTY, 1834
(From Painting by Catlin)

tives to a general peace council which was held at Fort Gibson while the delegations from the tribes from the plains were there.

*In these councils the visiting delegations of Delaware, Cherokee, Seneca and Osage Indians took an active part, urging that their brethren of the Plains listen to the White Man's words and turn into the paths of peace. As a preliminary move in several of these councils, Colonel Dodge restored to their tribes several captives who had been rescued from other tribes with which these Indians of the Southern Plains region had been at war.

CHAPTER VI

(1835 - 1845)

Migration of Other Tribes from the East

65.

FACTIONS and Feuds Among the Cherokee.— A large part of the Cherokee people still remained in the East. It was difficult to get them to consider any proposition to move to the West. Finally a delegation of Cherokee, headed by John Ross, principal chief of the Nation, concluded a treaty with the Government, February 28, 1835, by the terms of which the Cherokee were to cede the remainder of their lands east of the Mississippi and move to the West. The Cherokee were to abide by the decision of the United States Senate as to the amount to be awarded to them in payment for giving up their hereditary domain and moving to a new country west of the great river. The Senate fixed the amount at $5,000,000.00 for lands that were then worth not less than $20,000,000.00. Deeming this insufficient, Ross and his associates thereupon refused to assume the responsibility of accepting the award and insisted that it be referred to a general council of their people for deliberation and final determination. Another delegation, headed by Major Ridge and Elias Boudinot, believing it useless to oppose the evident determination of the Government to move their tribe, then led in a movement in favor of a new treaty. The general council of the Cherokee Nation met in October, 1835. The proposed Ridge Treaty was rejected. The Senate award of $5,000,000, was refused consideration. The Government commissioner, J. T. Schermerhorn, then called another council

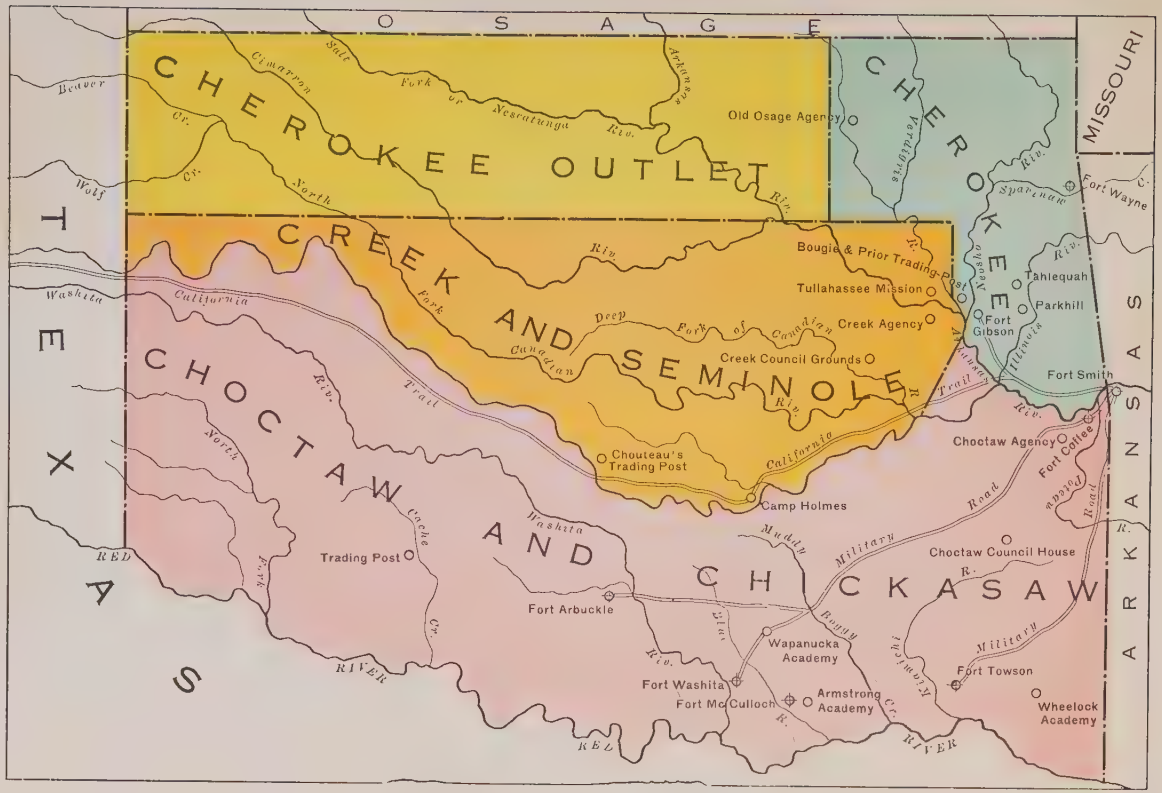
which met at New Echota, Georgia, in December, 1835. This council, which was attended by but few of the Cherokee, was not authorized or sanctioned by the officials of the Cherokee Nation, though it assumed to act in the name and behalf of the entire Cherokee people. The action the New Echota council, whereby it was proposed to barter away the land of their fathers met with an all but unanimous protest from the Cherokee people. Regardless of this, however, the treaty was ratified by the United States Senate.* President Andrew Jackson refused to consider any appeals. Protest after protest was made by the wronged Cherokee, but without avail. The Administration was determined to aid the state of Georgia in its efforts to force the removal of the Cherokee. The treaty of New Echota was officially proclaimed, May 23, 1836.

MAJOR RIDGE

66. Creek Nation Reunited.—The main body of the Creek Nation moved to the new reservation in 1836. That part of the tribe which had immigrated some years before, hesitated about receiving their brethren from the East until after they were given assurances that they would accept and abide by the tribal organization and laws which were already established and in effect.

67. The Chickasaw Join the Choctaw.—By the terms of a treaty or agreement entered into between the Chickasaw and Choctaw Nations at Doaksville, near Fort Towson, January 17, 1837, the Chickasaw purchased a joint interest in the granted reservation of the Choctaw, providing for the establishment of a Chickasaw district for administrative purposes, but permitting members of either tribe to settle at will within the limits governed by the laws of the other. For this

*It is but fair to state that the vote on the ratification of the treaty of New Echota, showed barely the requisite two-thirds majority.



Indian Territory, 1836-1856

privilege the Chickasaw paid the Choctaw the sum of $530,000.00.

67a. A Treaty with the Kiowa and Apache.—April 7, 1837, Gov. Montfort Stokes* and Col. A. P. Chouteau, as commissioners for the United States, effected a treaty with the Kiowa, Kattaka (Apache of the Plains) and Tawakaro (Tawakony). The other southwestern tribes, namely, the Comanche, Wichita and Waco, had made treaties with the Government two years before.†

GOV. MONTFORT STOKES

INDIAN PEACE MEDAL, 1837

68. The Cherokee Strip.—In 1837, the Cherokee Outlet, which had been provided for by the terms of the treaties under which the Cherokee moved to the West, was surveyed

*Montfort Stokes was a native of Wilkes county, North Carolina. He was born in 1760. He was in the American Navy during the Revolutionary War. He held a number of positions of trust and honor in his native state, and was a United States senator for one term, 1817-23. In 1830-31 he was Governor of North Carolina, which office he resigned to accept an appointment as commissioner to superintend the removal of the Cherokee Indians west of the Mississippi. He was then appointed Indian Agent by President Jackson, a position he continued to hold until his death, which occurred at Fort Gibson, November 4, 1842.

†The chiefs who signed the treaty of 1837 received silver peace medals as tokens.

and its bounds established. The work was done under the direction of Rev. Isaac McCoy.*

69. The Exile of a Nation.—The Cherokee steadfastly refused to recognize the binding force of a treaty to which they had never given assent. Meanwhile, the State of Georgia began first to survey and sell the Cherokee lands and then to dispossess the Cherokee of their homes.† Rumor had it that the Cherokee were about to rise in resistance and a large force of troops were sent to the Cherokee country. The Cherokee people remained quietly and peaceably at their homes, however, until they were forcibly removed and taken to the West in 1838, by a force of two thousand troops of the Regular Army under the personal command of Gen. Winfield Scott.§

REV. ISAAC McCOY

*Isaac McCoy was born near Uniontown, Pennsylvania, June 13, 1784. His early life was spent in Kentucky. In 1817 he became a missionary among the Miami Indians in the valley of the Wabash. Subsequently he labored among the Pottawatomie and Ottawa. He believed he could accomplish more in the way of elevating the Indians if he could get them away from the contaminating influence of the white settlements. He visited Washington and laid his plans for the migration of the tribes of the (then) western states, to the wilderness west of the Mississippi, before John C. Calhoun, who was then Secretary of War, and who approved the same. After continuing his agitation for several years he was named as a member of a commission to arrange for the emigration of the Pottawatomie and Ottawa in 1828. From that time until his death he was almost constantly engaged in aiding other tribes to select new reservations in the West, and to move to the same. He placed the western limit of possible successful agriculture at an undefined line drawn from north to south across the state, beginning at a point near the western part of Kay County. He died at Louisville, Kentucky, in 1845.

†At that time the lands of the Cherokee Nation were estimated to contain not less than 10,000,000 acres. Within its limits were to be found quarries of limestone and marble, mines of iron, lead, silver and gold and great forests of valuable timber, yet the Government of the United States asked—aye, demanded—that they give up all this as well as their homes and accept in payment a sum that scarcely represented a tithe of the real value of their belongings!

§On their arrival in the West the main body of the Cherokee were welcomed by their kindred of the Arkansas or Western Chero-

70. **A Sad Chapter.**—The means adopted to secure the removal of most of the Indians of the Southern tribes to the western wilderness were not always creditable to the good name of the American people. No white man who believes in justice and loves liberty himself, can now read of the eviction and exile of those simple hearted people, who were caused to suffer as the result of the avarice and brutal tyranny of a supposedly superior race, without a feeling of pity not unmingled with shame. The migration of any people, whether as individuals, families or tribes, is fraught with dangers, difficulties and hardships which serve to accentuate the heart-aches of broken home ties. The Indians of those Southern tribes were not nomads. They not only had settled homes, but, by every tie of strong and tender sentiment and of venerated tradition, they were firmly attached to the land of their birth. There, for unknown ages, had their fathers hunted and fished and gathered around the tribal council fires; there the ashes of their dead were buried; there, and there only, they wished to live undisturbed, and there they hoped to die in peace. What wonder that they literally perished by hundreds? The Choctaw alone lost two thousand of their people during and immediately after their removal, and one-fourth of the Cherokee died from the same cause. Hunger and exposure and disease may, indeed, have caused the death of many, but only the Great Spirit who seeth and knoweth all could know the silent anguish which caused so many of His red children to die of broken hearts. Traces of the roads over which the Southern tribes came into their new inheritance were still being pointed out by the Indians a few years since and were called by them "the trail of tears." The establishment and development of

---

kee, who thereafter became known as the Old Settlers, who held the country by virtue of the treaties of 1828 and 1833. These already had an organized government with their own chiefs, all of which they were naturally very loth to give up at the behest of the newcomers who outnumbered them. Ridge and his followers (known as the "Treaty Party"), joined forces with the "Old Settlers" in the contention. This division was not settled until the signing of the treaty of 1846.

new homes brought a measure of resignation, of course, but only death ended the mourning of many after the lapse of long years.*

71. Assassination of Ridge and Boudinot.—The old factional quarrel between the so-called "Treaty Party" and the "Anti-Treaty Party," the former headed by Ridge and Boudinot and the latter by John Ross,† was transplanted to the West by the removal of the Cherokee, with seemingly added bitterness. This feud finally culminated in the assassination of Major Ridge, Elias Boudinot and John Ridge on the night of June 20, 1839, by partizans of the Ross, or "Anti-Treaty," faction. Partizan feel-

JOHN ROSS

*General John E. Wool, who, with General Scott, was engaged in disarming and forcibly removing the Cherokee, found that his better nature revolted at such a disagreeable task. He wrote at the time: "The whole scene since I have been in this country has been nothing but a heart-rending one, and such a one as I would be glad to get rid of as soon as circumstances will permit. Because I am firm and decided, do not believe I would be unjust. If I could (and I could not do them a greater kindness), I would remove every Indian tomorrow beyond the reach of the white men, who, like vultures, are watching, ready to pounce upon them and strip them of everything they have or expect to have from the Government. Nineteen-twentieths if not ninty-nine out of every hundred will go penniless to the West."

†John Ross was born October 3, 1790, near Lookout Mountain, Tennessee. His father was a Scotchman named Daniel Ross and his mother was a mixed blood Cherokee. He had two brothers and six sisters. He was educated at Kingston, Tennessee. His public career began when he was but nineteen years old. At that time the agent of the Cherokee sent him on a mission to the Western Cherokee who had moved to the wilderness of what is now the

ing ran very high and, for a time it seemed that there was danger of a civil war among the Cherokee,* the opposition to John Ross being led by Stand Watie, a younger brother of Boudinot.†

state of Arkansas a short time before. During the War of 1812 he served as adjutant of a Cherokee regiment in the army of General Andrew Jackson in his campaign against the hostile Creek Indians in Florida. In 1817 he became a member of the national committee or council of the Cherokee people. A year later he became president of that body, in which capacity he continued to serve until 1826. He was president of the convention which framed the constitution of the Cherokee Nation. In 1827 he was associate chief of the Cherokee Nation, William Hicks being principal chief at the time. In 1828 he became principal chief of the Eastern Cherokee, serving as such until their removal to the West in 1838, when he became principal chief of the united tribe. He continued to fill that position until his death, which occurred at Washington, D. C., August 1, 1866. It has been said that his long administration of nearly forty years as principal chief was imperial and autocratic rather than republican or representative, though perhaps not altogether unsuited to the times and conditions. His first wife, Elizabeth, to whom he was married in 1813, was a full blood Cherokee. She died in 1839, at Little Rock, Arkansas, while the tribe was on the way to the new reservation in the West. In 1845 he was married to Miss Stapler, a Quakeress, of Wilmington, Delaware, who was many years his junior. She died in 1865. Ross had four sons and one daughter.

*Ross disavowed any and all personal responsibility for the rash act on the part of some of his more impetuous followers. His life was threatened in retaliation, however, and it was long years before the spirit of hatred between the opposing factions died out.

†Elias Boudinot (Galagina) was a Cherokee, born about 1802. In 1818, at the instance of the noted philanthropist whose name he was permitted to adopt, he entered the mission school of the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions at Cornwell, Connecticut. In 1823, in collaboration with Rev. S. A. Worcester, he began the translation of parts of the New Testament into the Cherokee language. In 1827, under the auspices of the Cherokee National Council, he established the Cherokee Phoenix, which was published for six years and then discontinued. In 1833 he wrote a book called "Poor Sarah, or, The Indian Woman," which was published in the Cherokee language and another edition of this book, printed at Park Hill in 1843, was probably the first book ever printed in Oklahoma. Boudinot was a man of marked ability and exerted a great influence over his people until he espoused the cause of the Ridge party in support of the sale of the Cherokee lands in the East and the migration of the tribe to the wilderness of the West. This made him very unpopular and ultimately led to his assassination by some of the more vindictive partizans of the opposition shortly after their arrival on the new reservation, June 20, 1839. Boudinot was a brother of Stand Watie, who was a colonel and brigadier general in the military service of the Confederate States.

72. **Prosperity of the Immigrant Tribes.**—The Indian immigrants from the eastern states who first settled in Oklahoma soon became prosperous in their new homes. They raised small fields of corn, wheat and cotton and kept large herds and flocks of live stock, including horses, cattle, sheep and hogs.* The Government authorities and missionaries tried to encourage them to continue to adopt the ways of civilization, but in this endeavor they were embarrassed, if not openly opposed, by some of the traders who constantly urged the Indians to neglect civilized pursuits and spend their time in hunting and trapping.

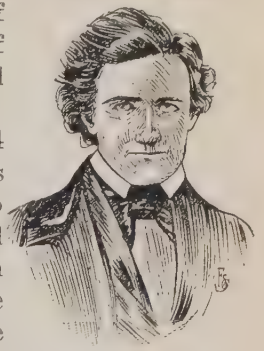
73. **Proposed Organization of the Territory.**—In 1839 a bill providing for the organization of the Indian Territory was prepared for introduction into Congress. It was submitted to the people of several of the tribes but it was not very largely approved, and no action was ever taken in regard to it.

74. **Operations of Fur Traders.**—The fur trade probably developed in Oklahoma during the latter half of the eighteenth century. Though it left little or nothing in the way of written records during the times of French and Spanish rule, it made its mark on the map with the names of streams and mountains, such as Poteau, Salaiseau (Salisaw), Cavaniol (Cavinal), Illinois, San Bois, Saline, Grand and Verdigris. After the organization of the American Fur Company, with headquarters at St. Louis, Oklahoma was included in the scope of its operations. Col. A. P. Chouteau† of that com-

*The Western Cherokee had so many horses, cattle and hogs at the time of the migration of the remainder of the tribe that the Government was enabled to purchase from them enough animals for the use of the new-comers in stocking their farms.

†Auguste P. Chouteau was born at St. Louis, Missouri, May 9, 1786. He was captain of militia during the War of 1812. In 1815 he entered the Rocky Mountain fur trade, ascending the valley of the Arkansas River. He became interested in the overland trade with Mexico in 1822. He was a man of great influence with the Indians and was on several occasions employed by the Government to negotiate treaties and agreements with them. He died at Fort Gibson early in 1839.

pany had supervision of its business in this section. In 1835-6 he built a stockade fort or trading post north of the Canadian River just above the mouth of Little River, in Hughes county, for the purpose of trading with the Comanche and other southwestern tribes. It was named Fort Holmes, a temporary military encampment of dragoons under the command of Lt. Col. R. B. Mason having occupied the same site but a short time before when it was called Camp Holmes. Fort Holmes was also sometimes called Fort Edward. In 1838-9, when a new trading house was established in the southern part of what is now Cleveland county, between Noble and Lexington, Fort Holmes was abandoned, the new post being used in the Indian trade for many years. Chouteau also established a trading post on the west bank of Cache Creek, near the present site of Lawton, shortly after the negotiation of the first treaty with the Kiowa and Comanche, in 1837.



DR. JOSIAH GREGG

75. The Overland Trade.—In 1834 and again in 1839 and 1840 companies of Santa Fe traders made the trip across Oklahoma from Fort Smith and Van Buren, Arkansas, each caravan being under military escort as far as the 100th Meridian, which was then the western boundary of the United States. The route followed was along the valley of the South Canadian River.* Shortly afterward the Santa Fe trade was interrupted as the result of international compli-

*The pioneers of the overland trade were Baptiste LaLande, 1804; James Pursley, 1805; McKnight, Baird and Chambers, 1812; and Becknell, 1822. McKnight, Baird and Chambers were arrested and imprisoned and their goods confiscated by the Spanish authorities. They were not finally released until 1821, after the beginning of the Mexican War of Independence. McKnight and Chambers are then said to have descended the Canadian River in a canoe, Baird returning overland. McKnight afterwards built a stockade trading post between the two Canadian Rivers, probably in what is now Oklahoma county, or Canadian, where he was subsequently betrayed and killed by the Comanche Indians.

cations and was not resumed until after the close of the Mexican War.*

76. Early Progress.—The tribes which thus migrated to Oklahoma in the decade and a half preceding 1840, were all more or less advanced in the ways of civilization, being to some extent engaged in farming, stock raising, trading and other occupations common to their time and location.† Missionaries had beeen laboring among them and churches and schools had been established. The Cherokee had especially distinguished themselves as a progressive people. The writing and printing of their language had been rendered possible as the result of the invention of the Cherokee alphabet by Sequoyah.§ They had a written tribal constitution which

*The leader of the caravan of traders which crossed Oklahoma in 1839 was Josiah Gregg. He was well known in the overland trade and was the author of a most interesting work of two volumes, entitled "The Commerce of the Prairies." Dr. Josiah Gregg was born in Overton county, Tennessee, in 1806. Not much seems to be known of his career except what is given incidentally in his writings, which are of a high degree of literary merit. He was engaged in the Mexican trade for many years, making many journeys back and forth between the frontiers of the two nations, at least two of which were across Oklahoma. His book, "The Commerce of the Prairies," is the finest revelation of life in the Great West at that period now extant. He died in California in the winter of 1849-50, the exact date and place of his death being unknown.

†The Cherokee Indians seem to have been engaged in river traffic by means of flat boats on the Cumberland and Tennessee before they came West. They still kept up an active interest in such affairs, which is evident from the fact that they owned and operated a fine steamboat which plied between their country on the Arkansas and the lower Mississippi to New Orleans as early as 1837.

§Sequoyah, or George Guess, was born about 1760, being the son of a white father and a Cherokee mother. There is a tradition to the effect that his father was Nathaniel Gist, son of Christopher Gist, the North Carolina scout who accompanied George Washington on his memorable mission to the French posts on the Alleghaney in 1753, the story running that Nathaniel Gist was captured by Cherokee Indians at Braddock's defeat on the Monongahela and kept as a prisoner among them for many years. This has never been established as a fact, however. Sequoyah grew up ignorant and untutored. He was not even able to speak or understand English and, even in later life when signing his name to a document in English, merely made his mark, as any illiterate would. When he first saw books at the mission schools he was informed

had been formally adopted in 1827.* It was republican in form, having legislative, executive and judicial departments and serving as a model for the organization of the governments of the other civilized tribes.

CAPT. NATHAN BOONE

77.—Boone's Second Expedition.—In the summer of 1843, Capt. Nathan Boone, of the 1st Regiment U. S. Dragoons, commanded an expedition which explored the valleys of the Arkansas and the Cimarron and those of their principal tributaries, going as far north as the great bend of the Arkansas. Among

that the characters represented the words of the spoken language Not understanding how this was done, he attempted to make characters of his own for the Cherokee language. At first he undertook to make a separate character for each word, but, finding that impracticable, he reduced his invention to a system by making a separate character, or letter, for each possible syllable in the language and one for the letter "s." In all, he had eighty-five characters or letters in his alphabet. He was enabled to teach this syllabic alphabet to any Cherokee, old or young, within three weeks. Types of the new alphabet were cast and books and newspapers were printed in the Cherokee language. As a result, the printing of books and pamphlets for the Cherokee Indians in Roman text ceased, save when the English language was used. Sequoyah, whose name in the Cherokee tongue signified "Talking Leaves," (in allusion to his invention), was greatly honored by his people and his memory is revered by them to this day. He first visited the Western Cherokee, in Arkansas, in 1822. The next year he moved west and remained. He was principal chief of the Western Cherokee (Old Settlers) at the time of the migration of the Eastern Cherokee in 1838-9. He died in 1844 while on a hunting and exploring excursion to New Mexico and was buried near Taos, in that Territory.

*The constitution of the Cherokee Nation is said to have been modeled after that of the state of Mississippi and, in turn, it served as a model for the constitutions of the Chickasaw, Choctaw and Creek Nations. The Seminole Nation had neither constitution nor published laws, its government being the most primitive of the Five Tribes. As a rule Seminole government was virtually in the hands of two or three men. Its council, consisting of fourteen clan chiefs, acted in the dual capacity of legislature and judiciary. The laws respecting crimes and punishments were usually adopted from the statutes of the Creek Nation, except that the Chief had no pardoning power. The Chief preserved in written

the places visited by Captain Boone* were the salt plains of the Cimarron and the Nescatunga (Salt Fork).

Summary.—The story of the removal of the Indian tribes from the Southern States and their settlement in the Indian Territory will always be one of thrilling interest, not only to their descendants but also to the American people generally. The tales of the deeds of pioneers always fascinate us, but the pioneering stories of no state have surpassed those of the Indian Territory in heroic, pathetic and tragic interest. That period of the history of Oklahoma can furnish ample inspiration for the best efforts of the artists, authors and orators of generations yet to come.

---

volume the few laws that were enacted by the council. The constitution, treaties and laws of the Cherokee Nation were printed in one volume of two editions, one in English and one in Cherokee. The constitution, treaties and laws of the Chickasaw, Choctaw and Creek Nations were printed, each in one volume, in English and the tribal language.

*Captain Boone is said to have written a very interesting report of the expedition, which, however, was not published. Nathan Boone was the youngest son of Col. Daniel Boone, the Kentucky pioneer. He was born in Kentucky in 1780 and moved with his parents across the Mississippi into Missouri, which was then a part of Spanish possessions, in 1796. He was a captain of volunteers during the Second War with Great Britain, and, when Missouri was admitted to the Union, served as a member of its constitutional convention and also in the state legislature. At the organization of the 1st Regiment of U. S. Dragoons he was commissioned captain. He was in command of the post of Fort Wayne in 1839 and 1840. He remained with the Dragoons for twenty years, retiring as a lieutenant colonel. He died in 1857.

Questions Concerning the Third Period

1. What tribes migrated to Oklahoma during this period? From what part of the United States did they come?

2. When and by whom was the Santa Fe Trail located? What part of Oklahoma did it traverse? Tell briefly the story of the Santa Fe Trail and its importance in the early history of the Southwest.

3. Why did the Cherokee wish to remain in their old homes in the East? Tell something of their life, customs and conditions of that period.

4. Who was Sequoyah? Tell the story of his invention of the Cherokee alphabet. How did it affect the life of the Cherokee people?

5. When did Congress pass an act providing for the establishment of an Indian Territory? What Indian treaties were made shortly afterward?

6. Who commanded an exploring expedition in Oklahoma in 1832? What noted American author accompanied the expedition? What interesting book told of that journey?

7. Tell the story of General Leavenworth's expedition. What tribes of Indians were visited? What veteran of the American Revolution accompanied the expedition? What noted painter of Indian portraits?

8. Who and what was John Ross? With what great events in Cherokee history was he connected? Tell of "the Treaty Party." Who were "the Old Settlers?" What were the provisions of the Treaty of New Echota? What was the condition of the Cherokee at the time of their migration as compared with other tribes? Recount the sad story of the exile of the Cherokee from their old homes.

9. What tribe joined the Choctaw? What tribe was settled among the Creek Indians?

10. Tell something of the overland trade. Where did the fur traders operate in Oklahoma? Did the traders help or hinder the work of civilizing the Indians? How?

11. When and by whom was the Cherokee Outlet surveyed? Give its boundaries.

12. What tribes of Indians in Oklahoma made treaties with the Government in 1837?

FOURTH PERIOD
(1845 - 1860)

CHAPTER VII

An Era of Peaceful Development Among the Five Civilized Tribes and of Continued Turbulence Among the Tribes of the Plains

78.

THE Annexation of Texas.—In 1845 Texas was annexed to the United States. For nearly ten years prior to that time Texas had been an independent republic. At the time of its annexation, Texas extended northward to the Arkansas River west of the 100th Meridian and included the No-Man's-Land country, which eventually became a part of Oklahoma Territory, in 1889.

79. **Population of the Indian Territory.**—In 1845 there were reported to be 75,678 Indians in the Five Civilized Tribes, divided as followes: Cherokee, 25,911; Creek, 24,594; Choctaw, 16,259; Chickasaw, 5,090; Seminole, 3,824. Many members of these tribes still resided east of the Mississippi. These continued to migrate for a number of years.*

80. **End of the Cherokee Feud.**—In 1846 the Government succeeded in inducing the three parties or factions in the Cherokee Nation to enter into an agreement whereby past

*Between 1845 and 1848 over 7000 Choctaws moved from Alabama and Mississippi to the tribal reservation in the Indian Territory.

differences were to be forgotten and the people of all parties were to dwell in harmony. The result of this effort was very marked in its effect upon the peace and prosperity of the Cherokee people.

81. **War with the Kiowa and Comanche.**—In 1846 the Kiowa and Comanche Indians made a treaty with the Government. For a few months they continued their friendly relations, but they soon resumed hostilities.*

82. **Across Oklahoma to California.**—In 1845 Capt. John C. Fremont, then en route to the Pacific Coast on an exploring expedition, detached Lieut. James J. Abert, near Bent's Fort, Colorado, sending him southward to explore what is now Western Oklahoma. Lieutenant Abert explored the valley of the Canadian and that of the Upper Washita. In the spring of 1849, when the excitement over the gold discoveries in California was at its highest, a large number of intending gold seekers gathered at Fort Smith and Van Buren, Arkansas. From Fort Smith they traveled westward in a single body across the present state of Oklahoma, following the valley of the Canadian nearly all of the way. The party was accompanied by a military escort under the command of Capt. Randolph B. Marcy.

83. **The Texas Cession.**—The dominion of the Republic of Texas extended northward, west of the 100th Meridian, to the Arkansas River in what is now Western Kansas The terms of the so-called Missouri Compromise of 1820 expressly prohibited slavery in all new states north of the 36° 30′ North Latitude and west of Missouri. In accordance with this provision the state of Texas, which had been admitted by annexation as a slave state in 1845, formally relinquished all claims to lands lying north of that line on November 25, 1850. The establishment of the bounds of the territories of New Mexico

*In 1847 the total losses from Indian raids on the Santa Fe Trail was reported as follows: Number of persons killed, 47; number of wagons destroyed, 330; number of horses, mules and oxen stolen, 6,500. With the exception of a few brief intervals, the Indians of the tribes of the Southern Plains region remained hostile throughout this period.

(September 9, 1850) and Kansas (May 30, 1854) left the so-called No-Mans-Land (now a part of Oklahoma) unattached to any state, territory or Indian reservation.

84. An Overland Trail.—In the summer of 1850, Lieut. J. H. Simpson surveyed and laid out a road from east to west across Oklahoma. From the Arkansas River the road followed the north bank of the Canadian to a point near Chouteau's trading post, in what is now the southern part of Cleveland county. Thence it followed the south bank of the Canadian to a point in the northern part of Caddo county, whence it crossed over into the valley of the Washita. After following the valley of that stream for some distance it re-entered the Canadian valley in Roger Mills county. The road followed was practically the same as that which was followed by the California emigrants the year before.

GEN. R. B. MARCY

85. Exploration of the Red River.—In the spring of 1852, Capt. Randolph B. Marcy,* 5th U. S. Infantry, and Lieut. George B. McClellan,† Corps of Engineers, were ordered to explore the sources of the Red River. Entering Oklahoma from the south, near the southeastern corner of Comanche county, the expedition skirted the valley of the Red River to a point

*Randolph B. Marcy was born at Greenwich, Massachusetts, April 9, 1812. He graduated at the United States Military Academy at West Point in 1832 and was commissioned a lieutenant of the 5th U. S. Infantry, with which regiment he served through the Black Hawk and Mexican Wars. He was on garrison duty and exploration service in Texas and Oklahoma from 1849 to 1854. In 1861 he was appointed as inspector general with the rank of colonel. He saw active service during the Civil War and, in 1869, he became inspector general of the U. S. Army with the rank of brigadier general. He retired from active service in 1881. He was the author of several interesting books on the west and western life. He died at Orange, New Jersey, November 22, 1887.

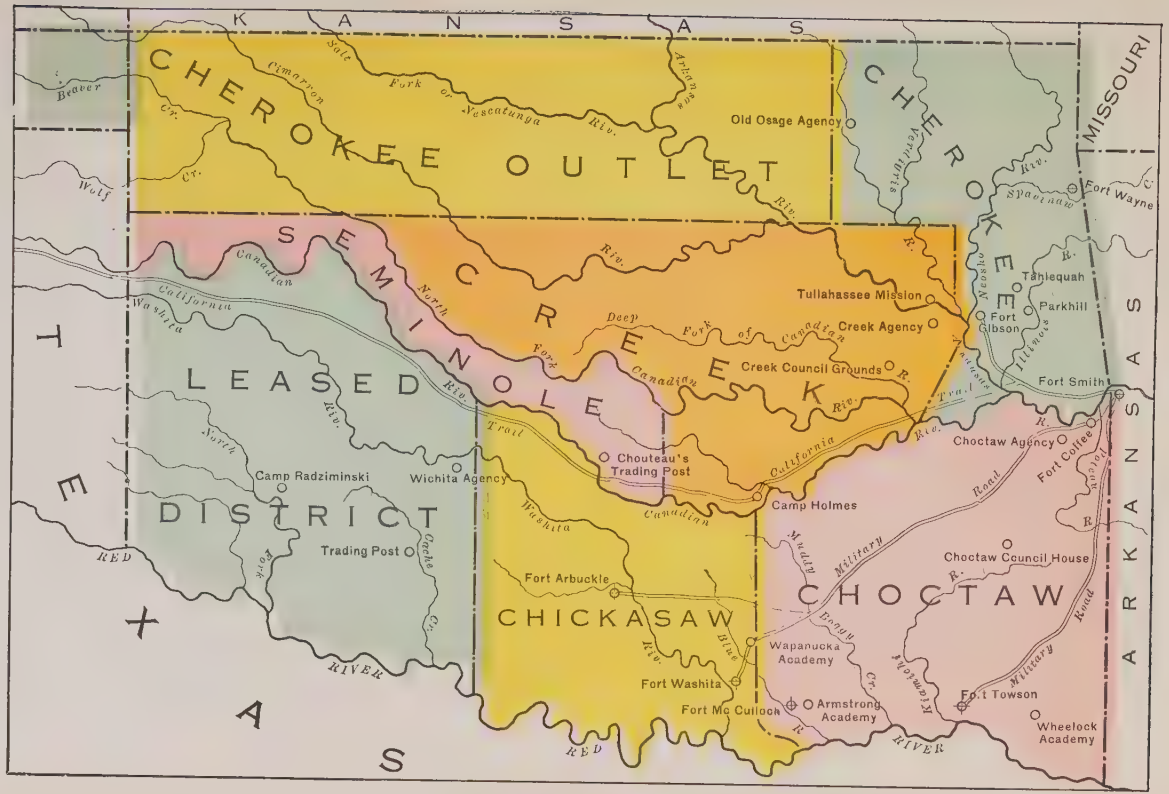
†Lieutenant McClellan, who had won a brevet captaincy during the war with Mexico, became famous later as the organizer and first commander of the Army of the Potomac during the Civil War.

near the mouth of the North Fork (Mobeetah) and then followed the course of the latter beyond the 100th Meridian. After exploring the source of the North Fork, that of the Red River, proper, was also visited. The return was made through the Wichita Mountains, and past the present site of Fort Sill, to Fort Arbuckle. The sources and tributaries of the Red River were explored and mapped. Some mistakes of Marcy's map complicated, if they did not cause, the celebrated Greer county dispute between the state of Texas and the government of the United States.

85a. An Inter-Tribal Peace Council.—During the summer of 1853 the Cherokee and Creek sent delegations to meet the Indians of the Comanche, and other wild tribes of the Plains, for the purpose of endeavoring to establish peaceful relations with them. At that time the settlements of the Five Civilized Tribes were sometimes subject to incursions or raids of the Indians of the Plains, and it was hoped to avert further troubles from that source and secure a promise of peaceful relations in the future. The season was one of exceptional rainfall, however, and, because of high water and other unfavorable circumstances the council was not largely attended and its results were disappointing.

86. A New Treaty with the Kiowa and Comanche.—The Indians of Western Oklahoma, including the Kiowa, Comanche and Apache of the Plains, were constantly committing depredations along the Santa Fe Trail. In the summer of 1853 a peace council was held with the chiefs of these tribes at Fort Atkinson, on the Arkansas, (near Dodge City, Kansas), where a new treaty was agreed upon.* One of the terms upon which the Indians agreed to sign the treaty was the prom-

*The Indians were very reluctant to sign the treaty for several reasons. They were strongly opposed to the establishment of military posts in their country, contending that the soldiers destroyed what scanty timber there was and also drove away the game. Another objection was that the treaty contemplated the ending of all hostilities between these tribes and the Mexican provinces beyond the Rio Grande, including the restoration of Mexican captives held by the Indians. The very name of the Comanche was a terror in many of the villages and cities of Mexico at that time.



Indian Territory, 1856-1866

ised payment of eighteen thousand dollars per year during the ensuing ten years, by the Government.

87. **The Calhoun Expedition.**—Early in 1854 an expedition consisting of two hundred U. S. Dragoons and scouts under the command of Capt. Patrick Calhoun,* marched from Western Texas against the hostile Indians in the valley of the Red River and about the Wichita Mountains. The command was caught in a very severe snow storm and experienced great hardship and suffering.

88. **An Indian Battle.**—The immigrant tribes from the states east of the Mississippi, which were located on small reservations in Eastern Kansas, sent hunting parties to the Plains every year for the purpose of securing supplies of buffalo meat and robes. This, together with the indiscriminate slaughter of the buffalo by the whites, caused a constant decrease in the number of buffalo and greatly angered the Indians of the Plains tribes. In the summer of 1854 the Kiowa proposed a war of extermination against the reservation Indians. They were joined by a large number of Comanche, Apache of the Plains, Cheyenne, Arapaho and even some Osage. Concentrating at Fort Atkinson, on the Arkansas (near where Dodge City, Kansas, now stands), a force of about fifteen hundred warriors of the allied tribes started to wipe out the immigrant tribes who hunted on the frontier. This great war party, probably the largest ever assembled in the Southern Plains region, met a party of about one hundred hunters, mostly Sac and Fox, with a few Pottawatomie and Delaware, in the vicinity of the Smoky Hill River, in Central Kansas. Thinking to make short work of exterminating such a small number of hunters, the Kiowa and their allies made three charges on the position of the hunting party, which was in a ravine. The reservation In-

*Captain Patrick Calhoun, of the 2d U. S. Dragoons, was born in South Carolina, February 9, 1821. He was a graduate of West Point, and was a son of John C. Calhoun, the great South Carolina stateman and apostle of the states' rights doctrine. Captain Calhoun's health was badly broken as the result of that trying winter campaign in Southwestern Oklahoma. He died at Washington, D. C., June 1, 1858.

dians were all armed with rifles, while their enemies, though far superior in numbers, were armed with only bows and arrows and lances, but a few of the Osage having rifles. The result was a victory for the Sac and Fox hunting party, the attacking force leaving twenty-six of their number dead on the field and having over one hundred warriors wounded.* Small hunting parties of Indians from the reservations continued to be harrassed by the Indians of the Plains thereafter, but there was no further attempt to make a general war upon them.

89. **Chickasaw Become Independent.**—By the terms of the Choctaw cession of the Chickasaw district, the Chickasaw Indians were to participate jointly with the Choctaw in the tribal government, with equal rights and privileges, the land to be held in common by both and neither tribe to dispose of its interest without the consent of the other. Such a political relationship proved to be irksome to the Chickasaw, however, as they were always out-numbered and out-voted by the Choctaw who were thus always in control of the tribal government and public affairs generally. The Chickasaw finally insisted upon a political separation of the tribes which was granted by the Choctaw in 1855, on the payment of $150,000.00 by the Chickasaw.

90. **Grasshoppers.**—A scourge of grasshoppers, or Rocky Mountain locusts, visited parts of the Indian Territory and destroyed all of the early crops in the summer of 1856.

91. **Separation of Creek and Seminole Nations.**—When the Seminole Indians were moved west from Florida in 1845, they were settled among the Creek Indians, of which tribe their own was originally an offshoot. The Seminole, though nominally clothed with all of the rights of citizenship in the Creek Nation, felt that they had been denationalized and degraded by being made subject to the Creek laws, and there

*Whirlwind, the great Cheyenne war chief, always claimed that the fight with the Sac and Fox hunting party on the Smoky Hill was the fiercest conflict in which he ever engaged, every feather of his war bonnet having been shot off by the bullets of the enemy, although he was unharmed.

was great jealousy and discord between the people of the two tribes in consequence. In order to harmonize all differences the Government concluded a new treaty with the Creek and Seminole Nations, August 7, 1856, whereby a part of the Creek reservation was set aside for the exclusive use and possession of the Seminole, who were thus allowed to establish a government of their own.*

92. **Abandonment of Fort Gibson.**—Fort Gibson was originally established for the protection of the Cherokee and other immigrant tribes, but the necessity for protection from the wild tribes of the West having ceased to exist, the Cherokee had urged its abandonment for some years. The garrison was finally transferred to other points in 1857.†

93. **New Tribal Constitutions.**—The Choctaw and Chickasaw, having separated as the result of the treaty of 1855, both nations adopted new constitutions in 1857.§ The Choctaw Nation afterward adopted a considerable portion of the statutes of the state of Mississippi as their own laws.

94. **Survey of Northern Boundary.**—In the summer of 1858 the boundary line between Kansas and Oklahoma (37th Parallel of North Latitude), was surveyed by a party under the direction of Lieut. Col. Joseph E. Johnson, 2d U. S. Dragoons.**

*The lands assigned to the Seminole were bounded by the Canadian and North Canadian Rivers and extended westward to the Texas line.

†By virtue of the terms of the treaties then in force the tribal authorities at once took possession and proceeded to sell most of the ground and buildings of the post. During the Civil War, a few years later, the post was re-occupied for military purposes, first by the Confederate forces, and later by the Federal troops. It was continuously garrisoned thereafter until its final abandonment in 1890.

§After the laws of the Chickasaw Nation had been adopted by the tribal legislature under the new constitution, a young man, who was a member of the tribe, was sent into Texas with the original copies (no duplicates being retained), for the purpose of having them printed. The young man who had been entrusted with this important mission mysteriously disappeared and the laws with him. As a result it became necessary to convene the tribal legislature in special session for the purpose of re-enacting the laws thus lost.

**Afterward famous as a lieutenant general in the Confederate Army.

95. **The Wichita Dispossessed.**—The Wichita Indians were known to have lived in and about the mountains which bear their tribal name for nearly three centuries at the time the United States assigned that region (i. e. between the Canadian and Red Rivers west of the 98th Meridian) to the Choctaw as a part of their new reservation (in 1825). Although the Choctaw claimed the country, they did not molest the Wichita, who continued to live in and occupy their ancient domain for more than thirty years. Indeed, it was not until 1854 that the Wichita learned from the Choctaw and Chickasaw that their country had been sold long years before. After inquiring into the matter and inspecting the maps, they made a formal protest to the Government and applied for redress of this most serious grievance. To this petition no attention seems to have been paid by the Government authorities. The next year (1855) in a new treaty between the Government and the Chickasaw and Choctaw Nations, the lands of their reservation west of the 98th Meridian were relinquished for the purpose of locating the Wichita, Comanche and certain other tribes upon the same. In the fall of 1855 the Wichita renewed their protest to the Government against the sale of their lands to the Choctaw and Chickasaw—lands which their tribe had occupied from time immemorial and in the sale of which they had not been consulted and for which they received no recompense whatever.

96. **War with the Comanche.**—The Wichita were at peace with the whites, and in the autumn of 1858 they were induced to undertake to persuade the Comanche to make peace also. The Wichita were then living on Rush Creek, west of Fort Arbuckle.* They succeeded in securing the consent of a large

*Fort Arbuckle was established by Capt. R. B. Marcy, April 19, 1851, and finally abandoned June 24, 1870, when the establishment of Fort Sill rendered its further maintenance as a military post unnecessary. It was named for Gen. Matthew Arbuckle. Prior to the establishment of this post, a temporary camp known as Camp Arbuckle had been maintained at a point on the south bank of the South Canadian River, north and a few miles east of Fort Arbuckle. Camp Arbuckle was first occupied August 22, 1850, and was abandoned April 17, 1851.

body of Comanche to go to Fort Arbuckle to have a peace council with the Government officers. The Comanche had gone as far as the Wichita village, near which they went into camp. There they were suddenly attacked, October 1, 1858, by four troops of the 2d U. S. Cavalry, from Camp Radziminski,* under the command of Maj. Earl Van Dorn,† (who was not aware that their presence in that part of the country indicated a peaceful mission), and a large number of the Comanche were killed. The troops also foraged and destroyed the growing crops of the Wichita. The Comanche naturally concluded that the Wichita had treacherously

MAJ. EARL VAN DORN §

*Camp Radziminski, which was named for Lieut. Charles Radziminski, 2d U. S. Cavalry, who died a few weeks before the camp was established (September, 1858), was situated at the lower end of the canyon through which Otter Creek emerges from the Wichita Mountains, in the southern part of Kiowa county. After the establishment of Fort Cobb, Camp Radziminski was abandoned, December, 1859.

†Earl Van Dorn was born near Port Gibson, Mississippi, September 7, 1820. He graduated at the U. S. Military Academy in 1842 and was assigned to the 7th U. S. Infantry, which was then stationed in the Indian Territory. He served with his regiment during the war with Mexico, being promoted to first lieutenant and brevetted captain and major for gallant and meritorious conduct in battle. He was commissioned captain of the 2d U. S. Cavalry in March, 1855, with which regiment he continued to serve until January 31, 1861, when he resigned. Entering the Confederate service a few weeks later as a colonel of cavalry, he was successively promoted to brigadier general and major general within six months. In January, 1862, he was placed in command of the Trans-Mississippi Department of the Confederate Army. After his defeat at the battle of Pea Ridge, he returned east of the Mississippi where he continued in the active service until his death (May, 1863) by assassination.

§From photograph, taken in 1859, with sword of honor presented by the State of Mississippi in recognition of gallant services in Oklahoma.

led them into a trap to be slaughtered. The unfortunate Wichita, with most of their property destroyed, and the Comanche suddenly changed from friends to bitter enemies, fled to Fort Arbuckle for safety.

97. Wichita and Other Tribes Colonized on the Washita.—Early in the summer of 1859, while the Wichita still remained dependent at Fort Arbuckle, the Caddo and Keechi Indians, fleeing from threatened extermination in Texas, came thither also. Meanwhile the Government had promised to allow the Wichita to return to their home land among the mountains. Acting upon the recommendation of Superintendent of Indian Affairs, Elias Rector, however, the Wichita, Caddo and affiliated tribes were located in the valley of the Washita for the reason that it was regarded as being better suited for farming than was the mountain country. The Wichita thereupon again protested against the assignment of their lands to other tribes without compensation. The Wichita complained bitterly that, while they who were peaceful were punished without reason, the warlike tribes were rewarded.*

98. Attempted Negotiations with the Comanche.—In the hope of persuading the Comanche to cease hostilities, a com-

*Many years afterwards (1871) the Wichita chief, Buffalo Good, while on a visit to Boston said: "The bones of my fathers lie in every hill and valley in my country and I don't want to be turned out of that country, for I love it very much. Nearly thirty years ago Washington (the Government) gave me and my people a good chief (agent) who tried to put us on the white man's road. We think he meant all that he said. We wanted to go on the white man's road very much. I and my brother represent five different tribes who have always been friendly with the whites. But, because we do not fight, Washington takes away our lands and gives them to the tribes that are fighting the whites all the time. My people are grieved at this and when I left home they told me to preach hard and get some satisfaction in regard to our country, but when I return home it will be with my hand before my eyes and my head cast down, for I can tell them nothing new. They knew it all before I left. When I went to Washington they said they knew all about my people and my country. If they did know, why don't they help us. Other tribes are doing well. They ought to, for white men have stolen the land from us (we who never hunted the whites) and given it to them. They are learning to grow up like white people. If Washington should give our lands back to us we would learn to do the same thing."

mission consisting of Superintendent of Indian Affairs Collins, Congressman John S. Phelps of Missouri, and Col. Benjamin L. E. Bonneville,* of the Army, proceeded with a military escort of one hundred and eighty men, to Western Oklahoma, in the spring of 1859, for the purpose of having a friendly talk with the Comanche. The latter, doubtless mindful of the attack upon their camp while on the way to Fort Arbuckle on a peaceful mission the year before, refused to trust the pacific intentions and professions of the white man. They broke up their camp on the Canadian in great confusion and fled northward upon the approach of the expedition.

99. **Van Dorn's Campaign Against the Comanche.**—From Camp Radziminski, late in the spring of 1859, Maj. Earl Van Dorn marched forth with six troops of cavalry in his quest of the hostile Comanche, his route being northward. From a captive Comanche boy he learned that a band of hostiles were encamped on a small stream north of the Cimarron. Leaving his wagon train under a strong guard on the Canadian about thirty miles below the Antelope Hills, Maj. Van Dorn pushed on, surprised the Comanche camp a short distance above the Kansas line, stampeded its herd of ponies and killed or captured the entire party of nearly a hundred Indians.† The expedition then returned to Camp Radziminski, which continued to be a base of operations until the beginning of the following winter.§

---

*Colonel Bonneville was the man whose travels and explorations in the West a quarter of a century before had been brought into prominence by Washington Irving's book, "The Adventures of Captain Bonneville."

†In this brief but brilliant campaign, of the nine officers engaged, four,—namely Maj. Earl Van Dorn, Capt. Edmund Kirby Smith and Lieutenants George B. Cosby and Fitzhugh Lee,—afterwards became general officers in the Confederate Army. Captain Kirby Smith and Lieutenant Lee were both wounded, the latter most seriously, his body being pierced by a Comanche arrow.

§On this expedition the troops were accompanied by fifty-eight friendly Caddo Indians from the Brazos reservation in Texas. In Indian warfare, white men were often unable to distinguish between Indians that were peaceable and those that were hostile. It was

Summary.—The period of fifteen years which ended shortly before the outbreak of the Civil War was distinguished as one of quiet and peaceful development in the Indian Territory. During this period the people of the Five Civilized Tribes made great progress. Besides improving their farms and accumulating greater wealth in the way of flocks and herds and more comfortable homes, the people of these tribes gave other evidences of substantial development. They no longer depended on the missionary stations to furnish their only educational facilities, but began the establishment of tribal schools, academies and seminaries. Church organizations were common among them and temperance societies were formed in several of the tribes. In the Cherokee Nation an agricultural society was maintained. Many of the Indians had neat, well-kept homes, with all of the comforts and conveniences of civilized life. The women were industrious as a class and many of them were very skillful in spinning, weaving and sewing.

---

just so in Texas at that particular time. The wild Indians of the Plains tribes never made war on the peaceful and industrious Caddo as they did on the white settlements near by. On the contrary, some of them even visited the Caddo, with whom they seemed to be on the most friendly terms. Their white neighbors thereupon became suspicious of the Caddo and finally organized a force for the purpose of exterminating them. They were dissuaded for a time but eventually the Caddo had to flee from their homes, abandoning their crops and most of their live stock. In their flight they were aided by Supervising Indian Agent Robert S. Neighbors, and by Lawrence S. Ross, who, years afterward, was governor of Texas. They found an asylum in the valley of the Washita, near the Wichita and other kindred tribes. Fort Cobb, supposedly named for Howell Cobb, then Secretary of the Treasury in President Buchanan's cabinet, was established shortly afterward (October 1, 1859) for their protection by Major (afterwards General) W. H. Emory. It was not finally abandoned until March 12, 1869, when it was deemed no longer necessary on account of the establishment of Fort Sill.

Questions Concerning the Fourth Period

1. Why should the annexation of Texas to the United States be mentioned in Oklahoma history? When did it occur?

2. When and how did the feud or dispute between different Cherokee parties end? What was the effect on the Cherokee people?

3. How did the wild tribes of the Plains keep their treaty agreements? Give examples.

4. What fortune hunters crossed the present state of Oklahoma in 1849? What route did they traverse?

5. Who finally explored the sources of the Red River? When?

6. What great Indian battle occurred in 1854? What tribes took part in it? Tell briefly the causes and results of the battle.

7. When and why did the Chickasaw seek to be independent of the Choctaw? When were the Seminole separated from the Creek Nation? Review some of the Indian treaties of this period.

8. What events of interest to the Wichita are recounted in this period? How did the Wichita innocently incur the ill will of the Comanche?

9. When was Fort Gibson first abandoned? Why?

10. Give short sketches of the lives of some of the noted men of this period. Name six leading events between 1845 and 1860.

FIFTH PERIOD

(1860 - 1865)

CHAPTER VIII

The Civil War in the Indian Territory

100.

THE Indian Territory at the Beginning of the War.—The dawning of the Civil War period was a most unhappy event for the Indians of the Five Civilized Tribes. With the exception of the Seminole, they had all been at peace with the white men for nearly a half century, and some of them for twice that long. They were prosperous in their way, raising fields of grain and cotton and having large herds of live stock. Not a few of them owned negro slaves, by whom most of the field labor was performed. Their life was simple and care-free and their few wants were easily supplied. It is plain, even yet, that they would have preferred to have remained at peace with the world. Naturally, they hesitated about taking sides in what was a white man's quarrel. Their friendly relations with the government of the United States had existed undisturbed so long that they were loth to make any experiment in the way of a change. On the other hand, all of these tribes had come from the South. Some, at least, of their domestic and social institutions were those that were

peculiar to the South, and, moreover, many of their people were related by ties of marriage and blood to the people of the South. For these reasons many of the Indians felt that duty called for a new allegiance even though the pleasant associations of the past were too strong to be lightly cast aside.

101. **Declaration of the Choctaw Council.**—At the time of the outbreak of the Civil War neither railroad nor telegraph extended as far as the borders of the Indian Territory. News from the East, where the exciting preliminary scenes of the great strife were being enacted, was slow in penetrating the distant realms of the Red Man yet, when it was received, it was pondered and discussed with eager interest. On February 7, 1861, the Choctaw National Council adopted resolutions expressive of its regret at the unhappy conditions due to the political disagreement of the Northern and Southern states, recalling the long and friendly alliance between the government of the United States and the Choctaw people, but, at the same time, declaring that, in event of the permanent dissolution of the Union, their natural affiliation and allignment would be with the people of the South.

102. **Beginning of the War in the Indian Territory.**—Fort Smith was seized by the Confederate forces April 23, 1861. A Confederate force from Texas, under the command of Col. W. C. Young, appeared before Fort Arbuckle, which surrendered May 5, the garrison being permitted to retire to the North. Fort Cobb was abandoned May 9. Fort Washita* was evacuated May 16 and was occupied by Confederate troops the next day.†

103. **Retreat of Federal Troops.**—The garrisons of Forts Smith, Washita, Arbuckle and Cobb, having concentrated un-

*Fort Washita was established on the east bank of the Washita River, twenty-two miles above its mouth, April 3, 1842, and was continuously garrisoned by troops of the regular army until its abandonment May 1, 1861, at the approach of Confederate forces. During the Civil War it was occupied by Confederate forces.

†Resignations of army officers had been so numerous that there were but two commissioned officers left with four companies at Fort Washita, while the garrison of Fort Arbuckle marched away under the command of a non-commissioned officer.

der the command of Lieut. Col. W. H. Emory,* of the 2d U. S. Cavalry, marched out of the Indian Territory to Fort Leavenworth, Kansas, four hundred miles distant.

GEN. WM. H. EMORY

104. Action of the Chickasaw Legislature.—On May 13, the Chickasaw Legislature, by resolution, declared that the alliance and friendship existing between the Chickasaw Nation and the United States was absolved in favor of an alliance with the Confederate States. The other tribes manifested more deliberation before taking such decisive action and several months passed before they were finally induced to consider the possibility of alliances with the Confederacy.†

105. The Indian Territory a Confederate Military District.—May 13, Capt. Benjamin McCulloch, of Texas, was

*Writing to the Adjutant General of the Army from Fort Smith, April 13, Colonel Emory stated that, on account of the turn that affairs had taken, the position of an officer in the United States Army who was from a southern state was extremely embarrassing in that part of the country, so much so as to impair his efficiency. He therefore asked to be relieved that he might go to Washington and explain conditions, expressing a willingness to resign at once if the explanation should be unsatisfactory. He was not relieved, however, and, after safely leading his command to Fort Leavenworth without the loss of a man, an animal, a wagon, or a single stand of arms, he resigned his commission and went to Washington. Colonel Emory, who was born in Maryland, in 1811, and spent his life in the army, subsequently entered the volunteer military service, after having been re-commissioned in the regular army. He reached the rank of major general of volunteers during the Civil War and was in command of the 19th Army Corps at its close. He retired from the regular army, as a brigadier general, in 1876. His death occurred at Washington, in December, 1887.

†The first negotiations or overtures from the Confederate authorities came in the form of a message from Gov. Henry M. Rector, of Arkansas, dated January 29, 1861, and addressed to John Ross, principal chief of the Cherokee Nation. Albert Pike, a prominent citizen of Arkansas, took great interest in winning the friendship and alliance of the Five Civilized Tribes, and he was later appointed a special commissioner of the Confederate States for the purpose of negotiating such treaties.

commissioned a brigadier general in the Confederate Army and assigned to the command of the Military District of the Indian Territory. The forces placed under General McCulloch's command consisted of one regiment each from the states of Arkansas, Louisiana and Texas. It was also proposed to raise three regiments among the Five Civilized Tribes to be attached to his command.

GEN. BEN. McCULLOCH

106. Confederate Government Seeks Friendship of the Indians.—L. P. Walker, Confederate Secretary of War, appointed David Hubbard, of Alabama, Superintendent of Indian Affairs for the tribes of the Indian Territory, May 14, 1861. Superintendent Hubbard was directed to at once open negotiations with the Five Civilized Tribes for the purpose of attaching them to the Confederate cause. Capt. Albert Pike, of Arkansas, was appointed special commissioner to treat with the various tribes for the purpose of securing offensive and defensive alliances.

107. Divisions Among the Cherokee People.—While the Chickasaw and Choctaw Nations were practically unanimous in their adherence to the Confederacy, the Indians of the Cherokee and Creek Nations were divided on the question of an alliance with the South. In the Cherokee Nation there were two parties—one in favor of an immediate alliance with the Confederate States, the other, headed by John Ross, de-

*Benjamin McCulloch was born in Rutherford County, Tennessee, November 11, 1811. He was a skillful hunter and boatman and in early manhood he migrated to Texas, where he identified himself with the movement for Texan independence. He was with the Army of the Republic of Texas at the Battle of San Jacinto. During the Mexican War he commanded a company of scouts under Generals Taylor and Scott. In 1853 he was appointed United States Marshal for Texas. At the outbreak of the Civil War he promptly espoused the cause of the Confederacy and was commissioned a brigadier general. He was killed in action at Pea Ridge, Arkansas, March 6, 1862.

claring in favor of neutrality. Ross, as principal chief, had issued a proclamation (May 17, 1861) admonishing his people to remain neutral, and in this position he was backed by a majority of the Cherokee people.

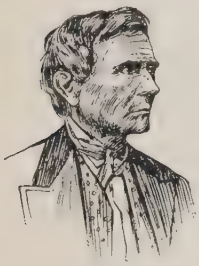
108. Confederate Treaties with Indian Tribes.—Albert Pike, as commissioner of the Confederate States, met the representatives of the Choctaw, Chickasaw, Creek and Seminole Nations at North Fork Town (Eufaula) July 10-12 and August 1, 1861, and negotiated formal treaties of friendship and alliance with each of those tribes.* The Cherokee acted with more deliberation. In August a general convention of the Cherokee people was called by John Ross, as principal chief, for the purpose of considering the advisability of entering into an alliance with the Confederate States.† This convention (August 21, 1861), after due deliberation, declared in favor of an alliance with the Confederate States, but the formal treaty to that effect was not signed until October 7, 1861. August 12, 1861, a treaty of alliance and friendship was concluded with representatives of parts of the Comanche, Wichita, Waco, Caddo, Anadarko, Tawakony, Tonkawa, Keechi and Delaware tribes. The meeting was held at the Wichita agency, now Anadarko. At Fort Gibson, October 2-4, 1861, Commissioner Pike met representatives of the Osage, Quapaw, Seneca and Shawnee§ tribes and negotiated treaties with them.

*In one of the reports in the archives of the Confederacy it is stated that there were forty Chickasaw families who remained loyal to the Union. Only seventeen members of the Choctaw tribe enlisted in the Union Army. In the Creek and Seminole tribes the people were much more equally divided in their attachments to the Federal and Confederate governments. It is probable that a majority of the Cherokee adhered to the Union cause.

†John Ross, who had long been the principal chief of the Cherokee, addressed the assembly in a statement giving the purpose of its deliberations, but very carefully avoided any word that would commit himself. When it was voted to enter into a treaty of alliance with Confederate States, Ross, as principal chief, signed the treaty, but he afterwards repudiated that action and renewed his friendly intercourse with the Federal government.

§Only small bands of Osage and Shawnee entered into treaties with the Confederate States. The major portions of these tribes remained loyal to the Union.

109. Changed Relations.—Thus the Indians of the Five Civilized Tribes were placed in the attitude of hostility toward the Government of the United States, with which most of them had been at peace since the beginning of the century. Living as they did they could not foresee the consequences of such a war or its possible effect upon their own interests. The general histories of that great conflict do not give much in the way of detail concerning the operations of contending armies in the Indian Territory, nor does a closer investigation reveal any great strategic advantages gained therefrom. But, for all that, war—brutal, cruel, destructive, wasteful war—came home to the people of the Five Tribes during the years that followed. If it was the White Man's quarrel, it also became the source of the Red Man's woe.



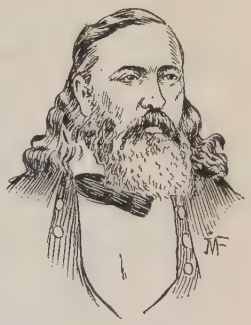
BLACK BEAVER

110. Flight of the Tribes on the Washita.—When Fort Cobb was abandoned at the outbreak of the Civil War, the Caddo, Keechi and other Indians who had abandoned their homes on the Brazos only two years before, and who dreaded further trouble with the people of Texas, hurriedly left their new homes and followed the retreating troops northward.* The Wichita, Waco, Tawakony and Delaware afterwards pursued the same course.†

*The loyalty of the Caddo to the Federal Government was only natural after their recent expulsion from Texas, which was still so fresh in their memory, though the Confederate authorities made sincere efforts to win their confidence and hold them in alliance. The influence of the Caddo seems to have had its effect upon the Wichita despite the lack of fairness and good faith which had characterized the treatment of that tribe by the Federal Government up to that time. Many of the refugee Indians from the tribes on the Washita were mustered into the United States military service during the Civil War. These tribes suffered many privations and lost a large number of their people from death by disease and exposure during their sojourn in the North.

†When Forts Arbuckle, Cobb and Washita were abandoned by the Federal troops in the spring of 1861, the garrisons were concentrated near Fort Cobb on the Washita. The troops were practically without supplies and were distant about three hundred miles

111. **Hostilities in the Indian Territory.**—After concluding treaties with practically all of the tribes which occupied reservations in the Indian Territory, the organization of Indian troops for the Confederate service was rapidly pushed forward, General Albert Pike* being placed in command Not all of the Indians were willing to accept the alliance with Confederate States, however. Many of the Creek and Cherokee Indians remained loyal to the Union, even though the Federal Government seemed to have abandoned them at the time. Late in the autumn of 1861 about 2500 of these gathered under the command of a Creek leader by the name of Hu-pui-hilth Yohola. They were poorly



GEN. ALBERT PIKE

from the nearest friendly settlements in Kansas. They had gathered at a place near the home of Black Beaver, a prominent member of the Delaware tribe. Black Beaver, who had served as a scout and guide with Col. John C. Fremont and later with Capt. R. B. Marcy, had a fine farm and had accumulated much property. Seeing the distressed condition of the retreating garrisons, he promptly offered to guide the expedition on its way to Kansas. On his return he found that all of his property had been appropriated or destroyed by the Confederate forces. Although he had thus sacrificed all of his belongings, the United States government had not reimbursed him at the time of his death in 1880.

*Albert Pike was born at Boston, Massachusetts, December 29, 1809. He was educated at Harvard and, in 1831, went west to Santa Fe. In 1832 he crossed the Staked Plains with several companions. After experiencing great hardships they finally arrived at Fort Smith, Arkansas. Remaining in Arkansas, Albert Pike first began teaching school, then took up newspaper work, and, finally, engaged in the practice of law. He was a prolific writer and was gifted with a large measure of poetic ability, even in the early part of his life. He served as a captain of volunteers during the Mexican War. He manifested great interest in public affairs and, at the outbreak of the Civil War, acted as Commissioner to the Indians for the Confederate States. In November, 1861, he was commissioned a brigadier general in the Confederate Army, but his active military career was brief, as he retired from the service in less than six months. After the war closed he lived for several years at Memphis, Tennessee, where he practiced law and edited the Memphis Appeal. In 1868 he removed to Washington, where he continued to practice law until 1880. Thereafter he devoted his entire time to literary pursuits and to Freemasonry. He died in April, 1891.

equipped for a campaign, having neither military arms nor proper organization.* In November, 1861, the Confederate Indian forces to the number of 1,500, under the command of Col. Douglas H. Cooper, marched up the Deep Fork Valley in search of the Union Indian force under Hu-pui-hilth Yohola. The latter retired northward, but the trail was followed by Colonel Cooper's command. The Union Indians were overtaken at a point north of the Cimarron River† where, on the evening of November 19, a battle was fought, resulting in a Confederate victory.

112. **Union Indians Again Defeated.**—Reorganizing his forces, Hu-pui-hilth Yohola attacked Colonel Cooper's command at Chusto-Talasah, on Bird Creek, December 9, 1861. A hot fight ensued but the Union Indians were repulsed. Cooper's force then scouted as far north as the Kansas line, intercepting many fugitives, after which they concentrated at Tulsey Town (Tulsa). December 22, two separate forces of Confederate troops moved northward from Fort Gibson for the purpose of meeting Hu-pui-hilth Yohola,§ who had reorganized his force and moved southward from the Kansas

*The loyalist or Union Indians were called Pin Indians. This name was applied in derision by their enemies on account of the peculiar manner in which the members of their loyal secret society wore ordinary pins as emblems. The name was accepted and adopted by the loyalist tribesmen, most of whom were full bloods. The Ketoowha Society, of the Cherokee Nation, is said to be a perpetuation of the Cherokee loyalist organization which existed at the outbreak of the Civil War.

†Probably within the present limits of Pawnee or Payne counties.

§Yohola's first name appears to have been spelled in several different ways. In the published records of the Civil War his name was spelled as one word, thus Hopoithleyohola. Yohola, who was probably born prior to the year 1800, had been prominent in the affairs of the Creek Nation for nearly forty years before the outbreak of the Civil War. Like John Ross, of the Cherokee Nation, he had been bitterly opposed to the removal of his people to the West. Indeed, it is not improbable that his sentiment of strong loyalty to the Federal Government at the outbreak of the Civil War was prompted by resentment and suspicion toward certain Southern states which he thought had forced the Creek people to abandon their ancient homes and move to the strange land west of the Mississippi.

line. The force under Colonel Cooper, which was composed of Indian troops, moved up the north bank of the Arkansas; that under Col. James McIntosh, consisting of troops from Arkansas and Texas, marched up the valley of the Verdigris. The latter found the Union Indians at Shoal Creek, December 16, 1861. In the fight which followed, since known as the Battle of Chustenahlah, the Union Indians were again defeated and dispersed.

113. **A Winter of Suffering.**—The Indians who openly avowed their loyalty to the Union had nearly all gathered north of the Kansas line. The sufferings of these refugees during the winter of 1861-2 are almost indescribable. They had abandoned homes and farms and stock. Few of them had tents or shelter of any description. Most of them were scantily clothed, many without shoes, and food was scarce. Sickness followed exposure and hundreds of the refugees died.

114. **The Battle of Pea Ridge and Its Effect.**—In March, 1862, the Confederate forces under Gen. Albert Pike were marched across the Indian Territory to participate in a campaign under Generals Price and Van Dorn. At the Battle of Pea Ridge, March 6, 1862, the Confederates were defeated by the Union forces under the command of Gen. S. R. Curtis. The effect of this battle was demoralizing on the Indian troops in the Confederate service, and their attachment to its fortunes was greatly weakened.*

115. **Federal Activity in the Indian Territory.**—Soon after the Union victory at the Battle of Pea Ridge, E. H. Carruth, Federal Commissioner to the Indian tribes of the Indian Territory, addressed letters to the leaders and chiefs of each of the Five Civilized Tribes, urging that they renew their allegiance and friendly relations with the Federal Govern-

*A large part of the Cherokee regiment of Col. John Drew, which had been raised for the Confederate service in compliance with the terms of the treaty between the Confederate States and the Cherokee Nation, deserted the Confederate cause and went over to the Union in a body. These shortly afterwards formed the nucleus for the organization of one of the Indian regiments in the Union service.

ment. About the same time Gen. James W. Denver,* was assigned to the command of the Union forces in the Indian Territory.

116. **Organization of Union Indian Troops.**—The organization of three Indian regiments for the Union service in the Indian Territory was authorized April 2, 1862. They were organized immediately thereafter. Col. R. W. Furnas,† of the 1st Indian Regiment, was placed in command of the brigade.§

117. **Cherokee Country Invaded by Union Troops.**—June 22, 1862, a force of 5,000 Union troops (including three Indian regiments) under command of Col. William Weir, marched southward from Humboldt, Kansas, and entered the Cherokee country. An attempt was made to enter into negotiations with John Ross, principal chief of the Cherokee Nation, which offer was courteously declined.** The only opposition to the advance of this force was that of Col. Stand Watie's Cherokee regiment. Gen. Albert Pike, who was in command of the Confederate military district of the Indian Territory, maintained his headquarters and held most of his forces at Fort McCulloch, on the Blue River, in the southwestern part of the Choctaw country, although repeatedly ordered by General Hindman, department commander, to move them northward for the protection of the Cherokee country. General Pike finally resigned, and when relieved of his command was temporarily succeeded by Col. Douglas H. Cooper. Colonel Cooper at once advanced his command to the Arkansas River, where it was united with that of Col.

*General Denver had been a territorial governor of Kansas. The City of Denver, Colorado, was named in his honor.

†Colonel Furnas was afterwards governor of Nebraska.

§The Indian Brigade, as then organized, continued in the service as such until the end of the War.

**Under date of June 25, Ross had written General Hindman, commander of the Trans-Mississippi Department of the Confederate Army, calling his attention to the defenseless condition of the Cherokee Nation in event of an invasion from the North, and reminding him of the treaty obligations of the Confederacy to protect the Cherokee country from such invasion.

Stand Watie. At the same time a Confederate force of five regiments, under General Rains, moved northwestward into the Cherokee country from Fort Smith. The Federal forces thereupon retired northward into Kansas.

118. **The Tonkawa Massacre.**—Of the Indians of the tribes on the Washita, the Tonkawa alone remained attached to the Confederate agency at Anadarko. In October, 1862, a band of loyal Indians, including members of the Delaware, Creek, Shawnee and Kickapoo tribes, raided the Tonkawa camp near Anadarko and killed the greater part of the tribe.*

119. **Second Federal Invasion.**—The Kansas division of the Army of the Frontier, under the command of Gen. James G. Blunt, attacked the Confederate forces under command of Col. Douglas H. Cooper at Old Fort Wayne,† in the Cherokee country (near Maysville, Arkansas), October 22, 1862. The battle resulted in a victory for the Union forces,§ the Confederate troops retreating in great haste, westward, by way of Fort Gibson, across the Arkansas River, to Fort Davis.** Fort Gibson was occupied by a force of Federal troops (3d Indian Regiment) under command of Col. William A. Phillips, November 9. From that time on, to the end of the war, Fort Gibson remained in possession of the Federal forces and was the base from which all of their operations in the Indian Territory were performed.

---

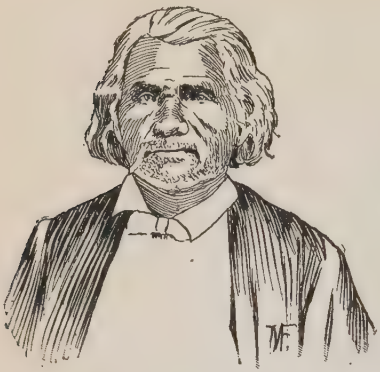
*The Tonkawa, it was claimed, were cannibals, and it was believed to be on that account that the Indians of other tribes decided to exterminate them.

†Fort Wayne was established on Spavinaw Creek, in the Cherokee Nation, October 29, 1838 (at the abandonment of Fort Coffee), and abandoned May 26, 1842 (when Fort Scott was established). Fort Wayne was named for Gen. Anthony Wayne of the Revolutionary Army.

§The official report of Colonel Cooper explains that, owing to the destitute condition of the Indian troops under his command, and their unwillingness to join in an expedition outside of their own country (i. e., to Kansas), many of the Indian troops that had been ordered to concentrate at Old Fort Wayne failed to respond, and left the forces in his command greatly weakened.

**Fort Davis was a Confederate military post named in honor of Jefferson Davis, the President of the Confederate States. It was located near the present site of Muskogee.

120. **Ross Deposed.**—While the Federal forces were occupying the Cherokee country, Colonel Cooper sent a message to John Ross in the name of the President of the Confederate States, demanding that he issue a proclamation calling on all Cherokee Indians between the ages of eighteen and thirty-five to enroll themselves in the Confederate military service. Ross failed to do so. When the Federal forces retired northward, a national convention of the Cherokee was held at which John Ross was declared to be deposed from the office of principal chief and Stand Watie* was selected to succeed him.†



GEN. STAND WATIE

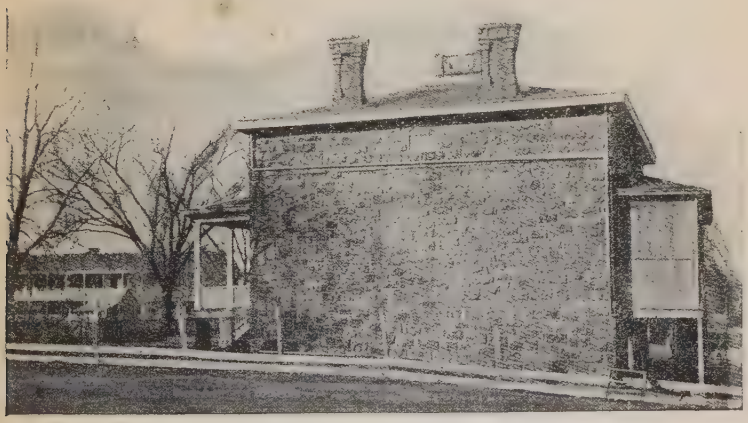
121. **Capture and Destruction of Fort Davis.**—December 27, 1862, Col. William A. Phillips, in command of a Federal force, crossed the Arkansas River from Fort Gibson, attacked and captured Fort Davis, a Confederate post, situated a few miles from Fort Gibson. After driving the Confederate forces southward to the Canadian River, Fort Davis was destroyed, the barracks and commissary buildings being burned.

122. **Reorganization of Cherokee Nation Under Federal Rule.**—Many members of the Cherokee National Council

*Stand Watie was born at Rome, Georgia, in 1815. He was a full blood Cherokee, a younger brother of Elias Boudinot and a nephew of Major Ridge. He was an influential member and leader of the tribe. He became Colonel of the 1st Cherokee Regiment (Confederate) in October, 1861, and a brigadier general in the Confederate Army, May 10, 1864. He died in August, 1877.

†From this time on the Cherokee people were not only divided into two parties, but had two tribal governments also; the one headed by Ross, the other by Stand Watie. Chief Ross went to Washington where he called on President Lincoln and expressed himself in favor of a renewal of friendly relations with the Federal Government.

were in the Federal military service. These, constituting a quorum and refusing to recognize the legality of the election of Stand Watie as principal chief, convened in February, 1863, at Camp John Ross, Capt. Thomas Pegg acting as prin-



COMMANDING OFFICER'S QUARTERS, FORT GIBSON

cipal chief.* Among the acts of the Council was one repudiating the alliance with the Confederate States, and another abolishing slavery and involuntary servitude in the Cherokee Nation.

*Principal Chief John Ross left for the East shortly after renewing his allegiance to the Federal Government and remained there until the close of the War.

CHAPTER IX

(1863-1865)

The Civil War (Continued)

123.

OPERATIONS in Indian Territory in 1863.—Early in January, 1863, Gen. William Steele* was assigned to the command of the Confederate military district of the Indian Territory. During the first half of the year there was but little activity on the part of either of the contending forces in the Indian Territory, though there were several ineffectual attempts to destroy the line of communication between Fort Gibson and its base of supplies in Kansas. A Confederate brigade, under the command of Gen. Douglas H. Cooper, was in camp at a point known as Honey Springs, on Elk Creek, a few miles from Fort Gibson, and south of the Arkansas River. Crossing the Arkansas above the mouth of the Verdigris, Gen. James G. Blunt, at the head of a force of about 3,000 troops and two batteries of artillery, moved against Cooper's camp July 16. The battle began about ten o'clock in the morning and raged fiercely for several hours. It resulted in a defeat of the Confederate forces,

GEN. WILLIAM STEELE

*William Steele was born in Albany, New York, in 1819. He graduated at West Point in 1840. Being assigned to the 2d Dragoons, he served in Florida during the Seminole War, in the military occupation of Texas and in the Mexican War. He was pro-

which retired southward across the Canadian River, after losing 550 men in killed and wounded, seventy-seven prisoners, one piece of artillery, one stand of colors, and two hundred stands of arms and fifteen wagons. The Confederates burned their entire commissary before retreating.*

124. **Action at Webber's Falls.**—On account of the scarcity of food and forage, nearly all of the Confederate forces in the Indian Territory retired to the valley of the Red River, where they remained until spring was well advanced. Col. Stand Watie, with a small force of Cherokee troops, remained nearer the Arkansas River, which was the line which then separated the contending forces. Several small skirmishes between Stand Watie's command and Union troops at Fort Gibson took place during the winter of 1862-3 and the following spring. A call was issued for a meeting of the (Confederate) Cherokee Council to be held at Webber's Falls, April 25. Learning this, Col. William A. Phillips, in command of the Federal forces at Fort Gibson,† after a forced march of thirty miles in the night, surprised and defeated the command of Stand Watie, killing, wounding and capturing a number of men, besides taking the camp equipage and preventing the proposed legislative session.

125. **Actions Near Fort Gibson.**—May 20, 1863, Gen. D. H. Cooper's Indian brigade crossed the Arkansas River near Fort Gibson and attempted to capture the cattle and horses of the Federal forces stationed at that place under Col. W. A. Phillips. The Federal commander was taken by surprise as

---

moted to a captaincy in 1851 and remained on duty on the frontier until the outbreak of the Civil War. He resigned his commission in the U. S. Army, May 30, 1861, and soon afterward was commissioned colonel of the 7th Texas Cavalry. He was made a brigadier general in September, 1862. After the close of the War, General Steele engaged in business in San Antonio. In 1874, he was appointed adjutant general of Texas. He died at San Antonio in January, 1885.

*The Battle of Honey Springs took place near the site where the city of Muskogee has since been built.

†Fort Gibson was so strongly fortified at that time that it was said to be practically impregnable against an attacking force of less than 20,000 men.

a result of the inefficiency of several of his outposts. He at once attacked the Confederates, however, the ensuing contest being severe with the result in doubt, until he was reinforced by a strong reserve.* The Confederates were then driven into the woods. The loss in killed and wounded was severe on both sides. Ten days later the Confederates attacked a supply train, en route from Fort Scott, a few miles from Fort Gibson. The military escort of the supply train having been heavily reinforced, the attacking Confederates were repulsed, leaving thirty-five of their number dead on the field.

COL. WILLIAM A. PHILLIPS

126. The Perryville Expedition.—After several unimportant skirmishes, Gen. James G. Blunt, in command of the Army of the Frontier, fitted out an expedition of 4,500 men to take the field against the Confederate forces under Gen. William Steele, which were concentrated south of the South Canadian River on the Texas Road (i. e., near the present town of Canadian, in Pittsburg county), August 22, 1863. Upon his arrival at the Confederate encampment he found that General Steele's forces had been divided, the brigade of General Cabell marching eastward to Fort Smith, the Creek force under Col.

*William Addison Phillips was born at Paisley, Renfrewshire, Scotland, January 14, 1824. He received an academic education prior to the emigration of his father's family to America, in 1839. He grew to manhood on a farm in Southern Illinois. At the age of twenty-one he was engaged in newspaper work, and a few years later began the study of law. In 1855 he moved to Kansas as the special correspondent of the New York Tribune. He volunteered for service at the outbreak of the war, was commissioned major of the 1st Indian Regiment and soon promoted to colonel. He commanded the Indian Brigade and, for a time, commanded a division, though he was never promoted above the grade of colonel. From 1873 to 1879 he represented the first Kansas district in Congress. After his retirement he served as national attorney for the Cherokee Nation. He died at Fort Gibson, Oklahoma, January 14, 1894.

D. N. McIntosh going westward up the valley of the Canadian, while the forces of Gen. D. H. Cooper and Col. Stand Watie had gone southward toward the Red River. The Federal forces immediately started in pursuit of the latter. The rear guard of the Confederate forces was overtaken and engaged several times, but owing to the exhausted condition of both men and animals of the pursuing force, they did not proceed further south than the town of Perryville. This town, which was a Confederate supply depot, was captured and destroyed by General Blunt. The Federal commander then marched his forces back to Fort Gibson.

COL. D. N. McINTOSH

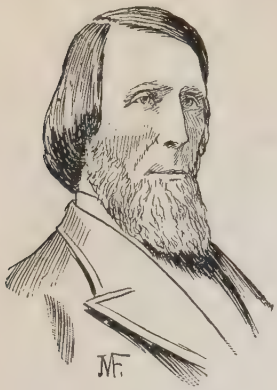
GEN. JAMES G. BLUNT

127. Capture of Fort Smith.—A Federal force under the command of Gen. James G. Blunt* descended the Arkansas River from Fort Gibson and occupied Fort Smith, September 1, 1863. Fort Smith had long been an objective point in the campaign plans of Federal commanders in the Southwest and its capture was regarded as a decisive gain by them.

128. A New Confederate Commander.—Because of the lack of harmony in the conduct of

*James G. Blunt was born in Hancock County, Maine, in 1826. After spending several years of his early life as a sailor before the mast, he studied medicine at Columbus, Ohio. In 1856 he removed to Anderson County, Kansas, where he continued to practice his profession. At the outbreak of the Civil War, he entered the military service as lieutenant colonel of the 3d Kansas Volunteers. In April, 1862, he was promoted to the rank of brigadier general. After his retirement from the command of the District of Southern Kansas and the Indian Territory, he commanded a division in the Army of the Frontier. After the close of the War he settled at Leavenworth. He died at Washington, in 1881.

the affairs of the Military District of the Indian Territory, General Steele was relieved of command,* and Gen. Samuel B. Maxey† was assigned to the position as his successor, December 11, 1863.



GEN. S. B. MAXEY

129. Refugee Indians.—After the permanent occupation of Forts Gibson and Smith by the Federal forces, all of that part of the Territory which was embraced in the valleys of the Arkansas and Canadian Rivers became untenable for the Indians who had adhered to the Confederate cause. They were, therefore, forced to seek refuge in the valley of the Red River. Like the Indians who had fled to the Kansas border at the outbreak of the War, they experienced great privation and suffering, and their destitute condition only added to the already heavy burdens of the Confederate military authorities.

130. A Winter Campaign.—At the beginning of the year 1864, the Confederate forces in the Indian Territory under

*General Steele complained bitterly of the insubordination and bad faith of certain officers of his command. The official correspondence which has since been published clearly proves that the activities incident to the intriguing of his subordinates for promotion were probably responsible for a large part of the demoralization of his command. The movement was discountenanced by the Confederate War Department, and General Maxey was sent from another part of the service as a thoroughly disinterested commander.

†Samuel Bell Maxey was born at Tomkinsville, Kentucky, March 30, 1825. He graduated at West Point in 1846. He served with distinction in the war with Mexico. In 1849 he resigned his commission in the army and the next year began the practice of law in his native state. In 1857 he moved to Texas. At the outbreak of the Civil War he espoused the cause of the South and raised a regiment (9th Texas) for the Confederate service. In 1862 he was made a brigadier general. As the result of his conduct at the battles of Prairie Dann and Poison Springs, under Gen. Sterling Price, in the spring of 1864, he was promoted to the grade of major general. After the war closed he resumed the practice of law at his home. In 1874 he was elected to the United States Senate, and six years later was re-elected. His career as senator was distinguished by both ability and activity. He died in Arkansas in 1895.

the command of Gen. S. B. Maxey, were distributed along the valley of the Red River in the southern parts of the Choctaw and Chickasaw Nations, at Forts Towson, McCulloch and Washita, and at Boggy Station. February 1, a Federal expedition was fitted out at Fort Gibson under the personal command of Col. W. A. Phillips for the purpose of entering upon an offensive campaign in the Creek, Seminole, Choctaw and Chickasaw Nations. The entire command marched to the mouth of Little River (in what is now Hughes county), where the infantry and wagon train rested while Col. Phillips, with a force of 450 mounted men and one piece of artillery, pushed on southward and westward nearly to Fort Washita. The latter was abandoned by the Confederates but was not occupied by the Federals. After returning to the rest of the command, small forces were sent out to scout over the Seminole country and the valleys of the Canadian and of the North Fork, to the west. The expedition, which was undertaken for its moral effect, lasted just one month and was counted a success. Copies of a proclamation addressed to the Indians urging them to renew their peaceful relations with the Federal Government were distributed, and personal letters were also sent to John Jumper, principal chief of the Seminole, and Winchester Colbert, principal chief of the Chickasaw, and one to the Choctaw Council, which was then in session. A large number of wagons, drawn by oxen, were captured and used on the return march to Fort Gibson to haul captured corn.

COL. JOHN JUMPER

131. **Battle of Poison Spring.**—In the latter part of March, 1864, when the Federal forces under the command of Gen. Frederick Steele began the advance toward Camden from Little Rock, a part of the Confederate troops in the Indian Territory, namely, General Gano's Texas Brigade, and Col. Tandy Walker's Choctaw Indian Brigade, were transferred

to Arkansas under the command of Gen. S. B. Maxey. The principal action in which the Indian Territory troops were engaged was that known as the Battle of Poison Spring (Arkansas), which was fought April 18, and in which the victory was with the Confederate arms. The Choctaw Brigade captured a wagon train and a battery of artillery. The action of the Indian troops was highly commended by the commanding officers.

132. **Capture of Federal Supply Steamer.**—Gen. Stand Watie, with a battery of artillery, fired upon and finally captured a steamboat which was ascending the Arkansas from Fort Smith to Fort Gibson, at Pheasant Bluff (near the mouth of the Canadian), June 15, 1864. The steamboat was loaded with flour, pork and other supplies for the troops at Fort Gibson. Gen. Stand Watie's forces were so elated with the captured prize that they at once began to carry off provisions in defiance of all military discipline, and, consequently, when he was attacked by a Federal detachment he did not have a force strong enough to protect the supplies which he had captured until they could be removed, and they had to be burned.

133. **Federal Supply Train Captured.**—The Confederate forces in the Indian Territory having been considerably recruited, it was decided that part of them should assume the offensive. Accordingly, the brigades of Generals Gano and Stand Watie, consisting of about 2,000 troops with six pieces of artillery, crossed the Arkansas River near the Creek Agency, September 15, 1864. Moving northeastward across the Verdigris, the combined commands reached the Federal military road from Fort Gibson to Fort Scott. This road was followed northward to Pryor Creek, where a Federal hay camp was attacked (September 16), its guard being defeated and dispersed with heavy loss, and over 3,000 tons of hay destroyed. The Confederate forces then marched northward along the Fort Scott road on the lookout for a large wagon train of supplies for the Federal forces in and about Fort Gibson. This they met (with an escort of about six hun-

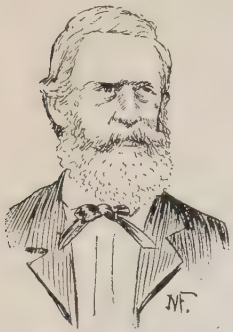
dred men) at Cabin Creek. The escort made a stubborn resistance, holding the attacking force at bay for six hours, but, in the end, the artillery and superior numbers of the latter triumphed, the former being driven from the field. Almost the entire train, consisting of 300 wagons loaded with government stores and post trader's goods, together with nearly 1300 horses and mules, were captured. The escort retired in good order, though with heavy loss in killed, wounded and captured. A Federal detachment under the command of Col. J. M. Williams, consisting entirely of infantry and artillery, arrived on the scene of the disaster after a forced march of eighty miles in forty-eight hours, and opened fire on the Confederates. This engagement continued till nightfall, the Federal troops bivouacking on the field. The Confederate forces retired during the night, taking with them 129 of the captured wagons. The rest of the wagons were burned, as were all their contents that could not be carried away. The Confederates retired by a circuitous route, crossing the Verdigris at Claremore Mound (Sageeyah), the Arkansas at Tulsey Town (Tulsa), and the Canadian at North Fork Town (Eufaula). The result of this brief and stirring campaign was a serious loss to the Federals, while it greatly encouraged the Confederates, and furnished them with a large quantity of much needed supplies.*

GEN. R. M. GANO

133a. **A Season of Inactivity.**—During the last winter of the Civil War there was but little activity on the part of the

*One of the fruitful results of this expedition was the ability of Generals Gano and Watie to issue new suits of clothes to each of the 2,000 men of their combined forces. General Maxey states in his report that this was a perfect God-send, as the troops were literally ragged.

troops of either side in the Indian Territory. The approach of the end of the war was apparent even in the official correspondence of the period. General Maxey having retired from the command of the Confederate forces in the Indian Territory, was succeeded by Gen. Douglas H. Cooper.*



GEN. D. H. COOPER

134. An Indian Peace Compact.—For some time prior to the cessation of hostilities, the Indians of the Five Civilized Tribes who adhered to the Confederate cause had been seeking to arrange a general council with the Indians of the tribes of the Southern Plains region. It was proposed to hold such a general council at Council Grove, on the North Canadian River, on the first of May, 1865. Instead it was held at Camp Napoleon, on the Washita, on May 26, 1865.† Three weeks later the principal chiefs of the Creek and Seminole Nations joined in an address urging all Indian tribes or bands, including those which had adhered to the Federal Government and opposed the Confederacy, to drop all past differences and become parties to the peace compact.

*Douglas H. Cooper was a Mississippian, who was agent of the Choctaw and Chickasaw Nations at the outbreak of the War. He became colonel of the first Choctaw and Chickasaw Regiment in the Confederate service, subsequently becoming a brigadier general. He was in command of the Confederate forces at the time of the surrender. After the close of the War he continued to live in the Indian Territory, where he died in 1867.

†The following is the compact drawn up and duly signed by the representatives of the tribes which gathered at Camp Napoleon:

"Whereas, the history of the past admonishes the red man that his once great and powerful race is rapidly passing away as snow beneath the summer sun, our people of the mighty nations of our forefathers many years ago having been as numerous as the leaves of the forest or the stars of the heavens; but now, by the vicissitudes of time and change and misfortune and the evils of disunion, discord and war among themselves, are but a wreck of their former greatness; their vast and lovely country and beautiful hunting grounds, abounding in all of the luxuries and necessities of life and happiness, given to them by the Great Spirit, having known no limits but the shores of the great waters and the horizon of the heavens, is now, on account of our weakness, being reduced and

135. The Dawn of Peace.—By virtue of a convention entered into May 26, 1865, Gen. Edmund Kirby Smith, commanding the Trans-Mississippi Department of the Confed-

---

hemmed into a small and precarious country that we can scarcely call our own and in which we cannot remain in safety and pursue our peaceful avocations, nor can we visit the bones and graves of our kindred, so dear to our hearts and sacred to our memories, unless we run the risk of being murdered by our more powerful enemies; and,

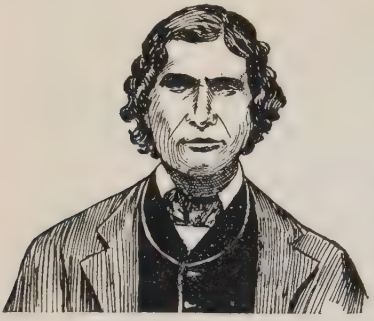
"Whereas, there still remain in the timbered country, on the plains and in the mountains, many bands of our people which, if united, would present a body that would afford sufficient strength to command respect and assert our rights. Therefore, we, the Cherokees, Choctaws, Muskogees, Seminoles, Chickasaws, Reserve Caddos, Reserve Osages, Reserve Comanches, comprising the Confederate Indian Tribes, and allies of the Confederate States, of the first part, and our brothers of the plains, the Kiowas, Arapahoes, Chivans, Chochotekas, Tenaweets, Yampankas, Mootchas and Jim Pock Mark's band of Caddos and Anadarkoes, of the second part, do, for our peace and happiness and the preservation of our race, make and enter into the following league and compact, to-wit:

"Article 1. Peace and friendship shall forever exist between the tribes and bands, parties to this compact. The ancient council fires of our forefathers already kindled by our brothers of the timbered country shall be kept kindled and blazing by brotherly love until their smoke shall ascend to the spirit land to invoke the blessing of the Great Spirit on all of our good works. The tomahawk shall forever be buried. The scalping knife shall forever be broken. The war path heretofore leading from one tribe to another shall grow up and become as the wild wilderness. The path of peace shall be opened from one tribe or band to another, and kept open and traveled in friendship, so that it may become white and brighten as time rolls on, and so that our children in all time to come may travel no other road and never shall it be stained with the blood of our brothers.

"Article II. The parties to this compact shall compose (as our undersigned brothers of the timbered country of the first part already have done) an Indian confederacy or band of brothers, having for its object the peace, the happiness and the protection of all alike and the preservation of our race. In no case shall the war path be opened to settle any difficulty or dispute that may hereafter arise between any of the tribes or bands, parties to this compact, or individuals thereof. All the difficulties shall be settled without the shedding of any blood and, by suggestion of the chiefs and headmen of the tribes, bands or persons interested. The motto and great principle of the confederated Indian tribes shall be 'An Indian shall not spill an Indian's blood.'

"In testimony of our sincerity and good faith in entering into this compact we have smoked the pipe of peace and extended to each other the hand of friendship and exchanged the tokens and emblems of peace and friendship peculiar to our race this 26th day of May, 1865." (Signatures omitted.)

erate Army, surrendered the forces under his command to Gen. Edward R. S. Canby, commanding the Military Division of West Mississippi. Gen. Douglas H. Cooper carried out the terms agreed upon between General Canby and General Kirby Smith, in so far as the white troops of his command were concerned, but stated that it would be impracticable and even dangerous for him to attempt to surrender the Indian troops. The latter claimed to have entered the war as independent allies of the Confederacy, and reserved the right to treat directly with the United States government for the return of peace. The Cherokee forces under Gen. Stand Watie surrendered to Lieut. Col. A. C. Matthews at Doaksville, Choctaw Nation, June 23. The Choctaw agreed, through their principal chief, P. P. Pitchlynn, to cease hostilities at the same time. The peace terms by which the Chickasaw agreed to cease hostilities were signed by Governor Winchester Colbert* of that nation about two weeks later—nearly three months after the surrender of Lee's Army.



WINCHESTER COLBERT

*Winchester Colbert was born in Mississippi in 1810. He came to the Indian Territory at the age of twenty-seven, at the time of the Chickasaw migration. On account of the serious disagreement between the Chickasaw and Choctaw, he was sent to Washington as a special representative of the Chickasaw. The treaty of 1855 which followed, partly as a result of his representations, settled the contentions of the two tribes by their political separation. After the organization of the tribal government of the Chickasaw Nation, in 1856, Winchester Colbert served as a member of the national council or legislature for several years. Shortly before the close of the Civil War, he was elected principal chief or governor, in which capacity he served until after the end of that great struggle. At the close of the War he was active in the negotiations for peace between his people and the government of the United States. He participated in the peace council at Fort Smith in September, 1865, and, as principal chief and delegate from the Chickasaw Nation, he was one of the signers of the Choctaw-Chickasaw treaty with the

136. Internal Dissensions a Result of the Civil War.—The close of the Civil War found the Indian Territory rent in twain by factions. The Creek and Cherokee were nearly equally divided in the fratricidal strife, and probably nowhere in the United States did the conflict leave such bitterness. Not only were small predatory bands common, but the old feud between the factions had been intensified by the four years of warfare until there was a determined feeling on each side that the other should not return home. For some time, indeed, military authority was necessary to preserve order. The Choctaw and Chickasaw Nations having been almost united in their support of the Confederacy, there was very little factional trouble within their boundaries.

137. A Peace Council Called.—June 18, 1865, Peter P. Pitchlynn,* principal chief of the Choctaw Nation, issued a

Government in April, 1866. Subsequent to his retirement from the office of principal chief, he served as a member of the upper house of the Chickasaw legislature. He was faithful to every duty and, after years spent in public service, he retired to private life a poor man. He died in 1880 and was buried near Stonewall.

*Peter P. Pitchlynn was born in Noxubee County, Mississippi, January 30, 1806. His father, a white man, was the Government interpreter for the Choctaw Nation, having been first commissioned as such by President Washington. Thirsting for an education before any schools were established among the Choctaw, he was sent to Tennessee, where he attended an academy, and afterward the University of Nashville, from which institution he graduated. Returning home from school once as a boy, he found his people making a new treaty with the Government, of which he so strongly disapproved that he refused to shake hands with Gen. Andrew Jackson, the Government commissioner. Although he afterward became a very warm friend of General Jackson, he never became reconciled to the treaty. In 1828 he was selected by the Government as the leader of a Choctaw party to explore the proposed Indian Territory and make peace with the Osage. Although but little more than a youth at the time, he discharged the duty thus imposed with a degree of courage and diplomacy that would have done credit to a man many years older. At the beginning of the Civil War he was in Washington on public business and assured President Lincoln that he hoped to hold his people neutral. He remained loyal to the Union throughout the War, though three of his sons were in the Confederate Army. As a result of the War, he lost a large amount of property, including 100 slaves. He was a friend of Henry Clay and of Charles Dickens. The latter described him as a man of great physical beauty and a natural orator. Pitchlynn died in the city of Washington in 1881 and was buried in the Congressional cemetery, Gen. Albert Pike pronouncing the eulogy.

proclamation calling for a general peace council of all the tribes of the Indian Territory to convene September 1, at Armstrong Academy in the Choctaw Nation. It was proposed to meet the commissioners of the United States for the purpose of renewing the treaties which had been abrogated by the several tribes at the outbreak of the war.* The war being at an end, the Indians were naturally anxious as to the terms upon which new treaties might be made. The general council of the Indians of the tribes residing in the Indian Territory was held at Fort Smith, Arkansas, in September, 1865. The tribes represented were the Cherokee, Chickasaw, Choctaw, Comanche, Creek, Osage, Quapaw, Seminole, Seneca, Shawnee, Wichita and Wyandotte. The representatives on the part of the United States were: D. N. Cooley, Commissioner of Indian Affairs; Elijah Sells, Superintendent of Indian Affairs, Thomas Wistar, Gen. W. S. Harney,† and Col. E. S. Parker.

138. **Peace Conditions.**—At this council the Indians were informed that those tribes which had entered into treaties of alliance with the late Confederate government had forfeited all of their old rights of consideration and protection from the government of the United States, and that their property was subject to confiscation. They were given to understand, however, that the Government did not wish to be harsh, but that it would insist upon some conditions to which these tribes would have to agree before their former treaty relations could be renewed. These conditions or stipulations included

*After reciting the existing conditions and urging that all tribes be represented in the council, the proclamation concludes as follows: "It therefore becomes us as a brave people to forget and lay aside our prejudices and prove ourselves equal to the occasion. Let reason obtain now that the sway of passion has passed, and let us meet in council with a proper spirit, and resume our former relations with the United States government."

†General Harney had retired from the Regular Army, after long and active service, in which he had gained especial distinction as an Indian fighter. Colonel Parker was an educated Iroquois Indian, who had served as a member of General Grant's personal staff during the Civil War. He was afterwards Commissioner of Indian Affairs during President Grant's administration.

the abolition of slavery, and the union of all the tribes in the Indian Territory into one commonwealth with a territorial form of government. The former negro slaves of the Indians were also to be accorded full tribal rights. To some of these stipulations some of the tribes strongly demurred, and, after a fruitless session of thirteen days, the council adjourned September 21, to meet at Washington the next year.*

139. **Summary.**—The results of the Civil War had a pathetic aspect from almost any viewpoint, but from none more so than that of the people of the Indian Territory. With homes and belongings destroyed, farms laid waste, stock driven away, and owners compelled to flee for refuge, the story of ruin seems almost complete. Added to this was the presence and activity of a lawless element which knew no feeling of loyal attachment to either side, but, on the contrary, plundered and robbed from the people of both sides as occasion offered. If the picture is not dark enough, it is only necessary to investigate the criminally dishonest business methods of the contractors who furnished supplies for the de-

*Milton W. Reynolds, who was present at the Fort Smith council as a representative of the New York Tribune, many years later wrote a reminiscence of that gathering which is quoted in part as follows:

"The council of 1865 was a notable one. On the part of the Government, distinguished statesmen and generals acted as commissioners, and the representatives of the Indian tribes were not less conspicuous and brilliant. Indeed, if the truth must be told, so far as power of expression, knowledge of Indian treaties and real oratory were concerned, the Indians had decidedly the advantage. Their great leaders, Ross and Pitchlynn, were still living and were active participants in the grand council. Col. E. C. Boudinot, then comparatively a young man, but the most gifted and powerful in eloquence of all the Cherokee, was just out of the Confederate Congress at Richmond as a delegate from the Cherokee Nation. He was fiery and excitable, but not pyrotechnic and lurid. His eloquence was heroic and impassioned, but not vapid or ebullient. He was a pronounced figure in the convention, and though difficult to restrain, gradually became conservative, and his former loyalty to the Government was restored.

"A large delegation of citizens of Kansas was present as counsellors and lobbyists, insisting that a place be made in the Indian Territory for the Indians who then lived on reservations in Kansas. Kansas was then plastered with Indian reservations. She wanted to get rid of the Indians who owned all of her western plains and the choicest lands in Southern Kansas."

pendent Indians, and to read the record of bickering and jealousy which distinguished rival aspirants for military promotion in both armies. In short, the story of the Civil War in the Indian Territory is not one which inspires the heart of a white man with a feeling of pride in his race. In striking contrast with such a picture of human selfishness and unworthiness are the heroic figures of some leaders in both armies who acted from motives of sincerest patriotism. Moreover, the patience and fortitude with which the mass of the Indian people endured hardships and privations, is one of which the people of any commonwealth might well be proud.

Questions Concerning the Fifth Period

1. Tell why the Civil War was a most unwelcome event to the Indians of the Five Civilized Tribes. Show, by their declarations, how several of these tribes tried with great tact and dignity, to keep out of the strife.

2. Who negotiated treaties with the Indian tribes, as commissioner for the Confederate States? Who was the first commander of the Confederate forces in the Indian Territory?

3. What military posts were garrisoned at the outbreak of the Civil War? Why were they abandoned? When? Who was in command of the Federal forces in the Indian Territory at the time?

4. Which tribes were almost unanimous in their sympathy with and adherance to the Southern cause? In which tribes were the sentiment and preferences of the people divided? Why did the tribes which hesitated at first finally enter into treaties of alliance with the Confederacy?

5. Who were the "Pin" Indians? Why were they so called? What Indian leader remained steadfast in his loyalty to the Union? Tell something of his campaign in the latter part of 1861. Where did the Indians who remained loyal to the Union seek refuge? Tell something of their sufferings.

6. In what battle .n Arkansas did the Indian Confederate troops take part in 1862? What effect did it have on the Indians? When did the Federal forces first enter the Indian Territory? How long did they remain?

7. When did the second Federal invasion take place? Who was in command of the Federal forces? Tell of the battle of Fort Wayne. Who captured Fort Gibson? Where was Fort Davis? When was it destroyed?

8. Tell of the division of the Cherokee Indians. Who was elected as chief by the Confederate Cherokee? Tell about the reorganization of the Cherokee tribal government under Federal protection. What action did its council take with reference to slavery?

9. Who was in command of the Union forces at Fort Gibson almost continuously from 1862 until 1865? Name the generals who were in command of the Confederate forces in the Indian Territory at different times during the War. Which was in command at the time of the surrender? What Cherokee Indian became a brigadier general in the Confederate service?

10. Tell about the capture of the Federal supply train. Where was it captured? What Confederate generals commanded the expedition? Tell about the battle of Honey Springs. Who commanded the Union forces? Who was the Confederate commander?

11. Why were the Indian troops not included in the surrender of the Confederate forces in Oklahoma at the close of the War? By whom were they finally surrendered? Tell about the conditions existing in the Indian Territory at the end of the War.

12. Where was the general peace council held? When? What were the peace conditions imposed by the Government? Why were they not accepted at the time?

SIXTH PERIOD

(1865 - 1875)

CHAPTER X

Peace with the Five Tribes Restored—Plains Tribes on the Warpath

140.

THE Chisholm Trail.—In the spring of 1865 Jesse Chisholm* laid out a trail from the present site of Wichita, Kansas, to the Wichita-Caddo Agency, where Anadarko is now located. This trail was 220 miles long. It soon became known as the Chisholm Trail and afforded a wagon route to Southwestern Oklahoma. It was also used for a time by the Texas cattle drovers. Over it passed the supplies for the troops stationed at Forts Reno and Sill and for the U. S. In-

*Jesse Chisholm was born in Tennessee about 1806, his father being a white man of Scotch descent, and his mother a Cherokee woman, whose sister, Talahina Rogers, married Gen. Sam Houston. Jesse Chisholm, it is said, could speak fourteen different Indian languages and was frequently called upon to act as interpreter between the army officers of Fort Gibson and the Indians of the wild tribes of the Plains. He began the manufacture of salt within the present limits of Blaine county many years before the Civil War. He also established a ranch and trading post at Council Grove, on the North Canadian (i. e., about six miles west of the site upon which Oklahoma City was afterwards built,) and obtained great influence among the tribes of the Southwest, by whom he was recognized not merely as a friend, but also as a counselor, arbiter and brother as well. He was an adopted member of the Wichita-Caddo tribes. His death, which occurred in March, 1868, was felt to be a serious loss to these tribes. He was buried near the North Canadian River, in Blaine county.

dian agencies at Darlington and Anadarko. It was used for that purpose for over twenty years. The principal camping points on the Chisholm Trail in Oklahoma were Pond Creek (near the present town of Jefferson), Skeleton Ranch (near Enid), Buffalo Springs (Bison), Kingfisher, Mouth of Turkey Creek, Cheyenne Agency (Darlington), Canadian River and Wichita Agency (Anadarko).

JESSE CHISHOLM

141. **New Treaties Made.**—Having failed to reach any definite treaty agreements with the Government in their general council at Fort Smith (September, 1865), the Five Civilized Tribes prepared to send representatives to Washington early the following year (1866) for the purpose of resuming negotiations. The Creek and Seminole delegations were the first to arrive. It was apparently impossible to secure treaties with all of the Five Tribes at once on account of the factional differences existing in several of them. The Seminole Treaty was the first one to be signed (March 21, 1866), though it is probable that at least one of the others was written first. The joint Choctaw-Chickasaw Treaty was next, its date being April 28. The Creek Treaty was dated June 14, and the Cherokee Treaty July 19, 1866.

142. **Terms of the Treaties.**—In their terms these treaties had much in common, yet they necessarily differed much in detail. All provided that there should be neither slavery nor involuntary servitude,* and each made some provision by which the legal status of freedmen should be fixed.† All of the treaties contained explicit consent for the construction of

*The Cherokee Council had voluntarily abolished slavery by formal legislative enactment in February, 1863.

†In the Cherokee, Creek and Seminole Nations the freed slaves of Indian citizens were to be granted full tribal citizenship. In the Choctaw and Chickasaw Nations they were granted citizenship, but no share in annuities and trust funds, and only forty acres of land to each.

railway lines across their respective tribal reservations. All contained provision for the federation of the tribes of the Indian Territory with a general legislative council, the membership of which was to be apportioned among the several tribes according to their population.* All made provision for the settlement of other tribes of friendly Indians in the Territory.† All of the treaties proclaimed a general amnesty on account of offenses committed as acts of war between 1861 and 1865, and each made provision for the reimbursement of tribesmen who had suffered loss or destruction of property by reason of their loyalty to the Union during the War. The commissioners on the part of the United States found considerable difficulty in attempting to harmonize the differences between the factions which had developed in some

*This federation of Indian nations and tribes was planned to be the beginning of a commonwealth under a territorial form of government. The treaties all provided that the Superintendent of Indian Affairs, who had direct supervision of the Indian agencies of the Territory, should be the presiding officer of the general council and should be the executive of the Territory. The treaty with the Choctaw and Chickasaw adds to the last mentioned stipulation the further specification that the Superintendent of Indian Affairs shall be the executive of the proposed territory, "with the title of Governor of the Territory of Oklahoma." Thus it seems that the Choctaw treaty commissioners at Washington first suggested the name of Oklahoma for the great state which now bears it. The delegation was composed of Alfred Wade, Allen Wright, James Riley and John Page. Campbell LeFlore was Secretary of the Choctaw Commission and P. P. Pitchlynn, Principal Chief of the Choctaw Nation, signed the treaty as a witness. The suggestion probably came from one of the six men, though, whoever made it, was probably too modest to ask to be remembered on that account. The word "Oklahoma," in the Choctaw language, signifies "Red People." The fact that the Choctaw are frequently referred to in their treaties as "the Choctaw Nation of Red People" gives additional significance to the suggestion and final adoption of the name.

†The Choctaw and Chickasaw treaty provided that Kansas Indians (i. e., those of any of the peaceable tribes which occupied reservations in the region north of the Indian Territory,) might be settled on unoccupied lands in the Choctaw and Chickasaw Nations. The Creek Nation ceded to the United States the western half of its reservation, amounting to 3,250,560 acres, at thirty cents per acre ($975,168.00), and the Seminole likewise relinquished their claim to 2,169,080 acres lying between the two Canadians, at fifteen cents per acre, for the same purpose. The Cherokee Treaty provided that Indians of friendly tribes might be located on Cherokee lands west of the 96th Meridian.

of the tribes, and this was the occasion of so much delay in securing the final agreement for new treaties.* The signing of these treaties marked the dawning of a great change for the Indian Territory. The coming of the railroads and the settlement of other tribes upon some hitherto unused lands meant that the isolation of the Indian Territory would be ended sooner or later.

143. **Results of the War.**—The representatives of the Government† found chaotic conditions in the Indian Territory when peace was finally proclaimed. Farms had been abandoned, buildings destroyed and stock run off or confiscated by contending forces. Churches and schools had practically ceased to exist, and social, business and industrial conditions were generally demoralized. The people were encouraged to return, to rebuild their homes, and to reopen their farms. Stock, seeds and implements were purchased for them, and thus they began life under the new order of things.

144. **The Coming of the First Tribes From Kansas.**—In the fall of 1866 the main body of the Delaware sold their lands in Northeastern Kansas and, during the next year, they

*John Ross, the aged principal chief of the Cherokee, headed the delegation from his tribe to Washington, but he was too ill to participate in the negotiations, or even to sign the treaty after it was drawn according to agreement, and his death followed shortly afterwards. P. P. Pitchlynn, principal chief of the Choctaw, Winchester Colbert, principal chief of the Chickasaw, and John Chupco, king, or head chief, of the Seminole, headed the delegations from their respective tribes. John F. Brown, special representative of the Southern Seminole, (later, for many years, principal chief of the Seminole,) was an active participant in the negotiations for the Seminole Treaty and witnessed the signing of others. Another witness, (and doubtless an adviser also) was Douglas H. Cooper, former Indian agent for the Choctaw and Chickasaw, and, later, commander of the Indian Territory district in the Confederate military service. Most of the treaties were signed by D. N. Cooley, Commissioner of Indian Affairs; Elijah Sells, Superintendent of Indian Affairs, (Southern Superintendency,) and Colonel Eli S. Parker, the latter being a Seneca Indian.

†From the re-establishment of peace in 1865 to 1870, the Five Tribes had, as their agents, officers who were detailed for special duty, as such, from the Regular Army. July 1, 1870, the several agencies of the Five Tribes were consolidated into what has ever since been known as the Union Agency, with headquarters at Muskogee.

moved to the Indian Territory, settling among the Cherokee, with which tribe they have ever since been affiliated.* At the same time the Absentee Shawnee, who had been living in the valley of the Walnut River, in Southern Kansas, during the Civil War, were granted a reservation of lands lying just west of the Seminole Nation. The Absentee Shawnee moved to their new homes in 1867. Two years later the Citizen Pottawatomie were settled on the same reservation with the Absentee Shawnee.

145. **Proposed Territorial Organization.**—During the Congressional session of the winter following the ratification of the new treaties with the Five Civilized Tribes (1866-67), a bill which had for its purpose the establishment of a civil government for the Indian Territory, somewhat similar to that which had been provided for the other territories, was introduced in Congress by Representative R. T. Van Horn,† of the

*A small branch of the Delaware has been living with the Wichita and affiliated tribes for a great many years. A part of these joined the tribes of the Washita at the time the main body of the Delaware moved to the Cherokee country, but others had already been living among the Wichita for many years.

†The Van Horn Bill provided that the proposed organized territory should be called Oklahoma, that name, it is said, having been suggested by Col. E. C. Boudinot, of the Cherokee Nation, who was in Washington at the time and who rendered efficient assistance in the preparation of the bill. Colonel Boudinot undoubtedly suggested the name out of deference to the Choctaw people, who had inserted a similar provision in their treaty a few months before. In the Forty-first Congress a similar bill was referred to the Committee on Indian Affairs, of which Representative Sidney Clarke, of Kansas, was chairman. After due consideration the Committee on Indian Affairs voted to report favorably on the measure, and an attempt was made to call it up for consideration in the House. Representative Shelby M. Cullom, of Illinois, who was chairman of the House Committee on Territories, interposed an objection on a point of order, claiming jurisdiction for the primary consideration of all bills of that nature for his own committee. Although it was near the close of the session, an extended debate followed. By agreement, the bill was then referred to a special committee composed of the members of both committees. Nothing further came of the matter. Van Horn and Clarke, who had taken a greater interest than anyone else in the proposed organization of Oklahoma Territory, both retired from Congress in March, 1871. Although bills were introduced in succeeding congresses to organize the Territory of Oklahoma, apparently no effort was made to get them reported out of the Committee on Territories.

Kansas City (Missouri) district. This bill was not reported out of the committee. The same measure was re-introduced in the next Congress (Fortieth), with a like result. In the Forty-first Congress it was again introduced.

146. **Removal of Many Kansas Tribes.**—February 3, 1867, the Seneca, that part of the Shawnee affiliated with the Seneca, the Miami, Quapaw, Wyandotte, Ottawa, and the federated Peoria, Kaskaskia, Wea and Piankeshaw tribes entered into a joint treaty with the Government, by the terms of which all of these tribes sold their lands in Kansas and agreed to move to the Indian Territory.* They were assigned to small reservations in the northeastern part of the Territory, within the present limits of Ottawa County. In 1868 the main body of the Shawnee disposed of their lands in eastern Kansas and moved to the Indian Territory, where they settled in the Cherokee country and were incorporated into the citizenship of the Cherokee Nation.

147. **Return of the Refugees.**—In the fall of 1867 the Wichita, Waco, Tawakony and affiliated tribes (including a part of the Delaware), returned to the valley of the Washita from their refuge at the mouth of the Little Arkansas, in Kansas, where they had remained during the Civil War. The Caddo and Keechi Indians also returned from Fort Lyon, Colorado, whither they had fled at the outbreak of the War.†

*The year 1868 was the last in which the Government entered into treaties with Indian tribes. The practice of making treaties with Indian tribes, as if they were foreign powers, has descended from colonial times. A provision that there should be no more treaties with Indian tribes as independent nations was inserted in the Indian Appropriation Bill at the instance of Chairman Sidney Clarke, of the House Committee on Indian Affairs, and on its passage and approval no more Indian treaties were negotiated. The reason for this action was that the Senate alone considered treaties while it was held that all matters pertaining to Indian affairs should properly be considered by both houses of Congress.

†A scourge of smallpox greatly reduced the numbers of the Wichita and affiliated tribes during their sojourn in Kansas. When they started on their return to the Washita, misfortune seemed to follow them. First, a great prairie fire swept down upon their encampment and most of their horses were burned to death. Being thus unable to carry their surplus corn any farther, they buried it, and

148. **War with Tribes of the Plains.**—Although conditions remained more or less unsettled, the close of the Civil War brought peace to the eastern part of the Indian Territory, where the Five Civilized Tribes lived. In the western half of the Territory, where the untamed tribes of the Southern Plains region roamed at will, they rested and recruited after their bloody forays upon the border settlements of Texas on the south and those of Kansas on the north. One of the first tasks undertaken by the General Government after the end of the Civil War was the pacification of the Indian tribes of the Great Plains, extending from Texas to the Dominion of Canada. Most of the military posts of Western Texas were reoccupied by Federal troops, as were Forts Arbuckle and Cobb in the Washita Valley in the southern and southwestern parts of the Indian Territory. For the purpose of protecting communications between the Missouri River and the Rocky Mountains, nearly a dozen military posts had been built along the valleys of the Arkansas, the Smoky Hill and the Platte in Western Kansas and Nebraska and Eastern Colorado. As rapidly as possible after the troops of the Regular Army could be withdrawn from the South, they were transferred to the West for the purpose of strengthening the garrisons of these frontier posts, and relieving volunteers who had been stationed there.* Vigorous campaigns were begun against the Comanche, Kiowa, Apache, and the southern divisions of the Cheyenne and Arapaho, all of which were

---

it was stolen by the white freebooters. Then an epidemic of cholera broke out among them. Whole families perished in a day, and in some cases they had to leave their dead unburied. The home-coming of these Indians to the valley of the Washita was indeed a sad one. Indirectly, the White Man's quarrel had almost caused the extinction of these tribes.

*Many men who had won renown as general officers in the Union Army during the Civil War were transferred to this new field of action. Among the more prominent might be mentioned Generals Sheridan, Hancock, Terry, Merritt, Custer and Miles. But they did not all rank as high as they had during the Civil War. When the Regular Army was re-organized, General Miles came west as a colonel, Generals Merritt and Custer as lieutenant colonels, while other former generals ranked only as majors, and even as low as captains of the line.

found on the Great Plains south of the Platte and Republican Rivers, and the tribes of the great Sioux confederacy, which never come farther south than the Arkansas.

149. **A Treaty that Lasted Through the Winter.**—At the close of the first summer season the Indians were induced to come in and enter into a treaty of peace, which was signed at the mouth of the Little Arkansas River.* Two treaties were made: one with the Cheyenne and Arapaho (October 14, 1865), and the other with the Kiowa and Comanche (October 18).† By a supplemental agreement a few days later, the Apache of the Plains were permitted to affiliate with the Cheyenne and Arapaho. The Indians of these tribes were peaceable enough during the following winter and early spring, but soon many of them were away on the war-path again. The coming of the autumn season found them again ready to return to the paths of peace. For several years this policy continued. The hostiles were alternately coaxed and chased, petted and threatened, cajoled and chastised, but seemingly to no purpose. They would come in and be good Indians during the winter when agency rations were more or less necessary, but, just as soon as the grass was green on the prairies in the spring, their war ponies needed little grooming and no feeding to carry their wild riders on a far away foray. The gnawings of hunger and the chill of autumn breezes upon unblanketed forms were apparently more effective than the skill of the best trained cavalry forces.

---

*The site upon which the city of Wichita, Kansas, was afterwards built.

†Most of the noted chiefs of these five tribes of the Southern Plains region were present. The commission, which negotiated the treaty consisted of John B. Sanborn, Gen. William S. Harney, James Steele, William W. Bent, Kit Carson, Thomas Murphy and Col. J. H. Leavenworth. By the terms of these treaties, the Cheyenne, Arapaho and Apache were granted a reservation embracing nearly all of that part of Kansas west and south of the Arkansas River, and all of Oklahoma north of the Cimarron and west of the Arkansas, while the reservation assigned to the Comanche and Kiowa embraced all of the Texas Panhandle, or Staked Plains, and all of Oklahoma west of the 98th meridian and south of the Cimarron, to the Kansas boundary, and westward to New Mexico.

These conditions of alternate peace and war continued for several years.

150. The Medicine Lodge Treaty.—In the autumn of 1867, the Indians of these tribes were induced to gather for a great peace council on the Medicine Lodge, in Southern Kansas. A number of eminent representatives of the United States government were present, including Generals Sherman, Harney, Hancock, Sheridan, Terry, and Augur, as well as civilian officials,* newspaper correspondents,† and a large military escort. The Indians were sullen and their aspect anything but re-assuring. After being fed and flattered and threatened the chiefs and head men of the Kiowa, Comanche, Apache, Cheyenne and Arapaho were induced to sign new treaties, October 28, 1867, by the terms of which all of these tribes agreed to accept reservations in Southwestern Oklahoma.§

*Nathaniel G. Taylor, Samuel F. Tappan, John B. Sanborn, and John B. Henderson. Hon. N. G. Taylor, of Tennessee, who was present at the peace conference, as Commissioner of Indian Affairs, was the father of Hon. Bob Taylor, who is at present one of the senators from Tennessee.

†Among the representatives of the press who were present were Thomas W. Knox, of the New York Herald; Henry M. Stanley (afterward the famous explorer of Africa), of the Cincinnati Commercial; and Milton W. Reynolds, of the New York World and the Chicago Times. Reynolds, who adopted the name of Kicking Bird as a nom-de-plume, afterward took an active part in the agitation for the opening of Oklahoma to white settlement. In 1889 he came to Oklahoma and was engaged in newspaper work at Guthrie and Edmond. He died in 1890.

§Many years afterward, Milton W. Reynolds wrote concerning the gathering on the Medicine Lodge in part as follows:

"It was a great council on the part of the Indians. It is said that there were 15,000 present. At first they were sullen and morose and not disposed to treat; they were hungry and mad. They were filled, and, after feasting, they became better natured. It was at this council that I heard Satanta, in the presence of General Sherman, boast of the men he had killed and the horses he had stolen 'up at Larned.' He rode a big black horse which was branded U. S. Satanta was a fiery speaker, vehement, impetuous, tumultuous as a torrent, generally believed to be a common liar and a most consummate scoundrel. Kicking Bird was the second chief of the Kiowa and afterward became principal chief. He was a good Indian. I slept in the same tent with him. He once saved my life

151. **The Solomon Valley Raid.**—As might have been expected, the peace which followed lasted until the plains and prairies were again green with grass. Then the Indians became restless once more. At last, early in August, 1868, a band of Cheyenne, said to have been under the leadership of Black Kettle,* who, as one of the Cheyenne chiefs, had signed the treaty of Medicine Lodge the year before, appeared at Fort Hays, Kansas, after having left their women and children camped on the Washita, in Western Oklahoma. Boldly entering the post, the Indians proclaimed their friendship and pacific intentions, smoked the pipe of peace, were feasted on com-

GEN. PHILIP H. SHERIDAN

---

and that of my friend, Colonel Murphy, but as that incident is only important to ourselves, I pass it by.

"On one occasion we (the peace commission) came very nearly being gobbled up by the Indians, and probably would have been but for the presence of two old Indian fighters—Governor Samuel Crawford (of Kansas) and Gen. William S. Harney. It was a dull, dreary day. Listlessly and lazily the drops of rain drizzled all day long. Towards evening the Indians became restless; they moved about sullenly, sluggishly and slow; they would not come into the council. Governor Crawford called General Harney's attention to the unpleasant signs which, to his practiced eye, were plainly visible. The troops of the escort were at once drawn up in a hollow square with the Peace Commission in the center, and a Gatling gun turned straight upon the camp of the Indians. Needless to say, there was no massacre such as occurred under similar circumstances in the lava beds of Oregon a few years later.

"After many days of powwowing, the Indians treated. They were given homes in the Indian Territory. The commission gave away empires to the Cheyenne, Arapaho, Kiowa, Comanche and Apache; they were given anything they wanted in the way of lands and hunting grounds in the Indian Territory—anything to get them out of the state of Kansas."

*There have been pronounced differences of opinion as the alleged responsibility of Black Kettle for the atrocities committed in

missary stores, and yet, in less than three days, their hands were dripping with the blood of slaughtered settlers in the valleys of the Saline and Solomon. Then they hastily retreated to their supposed security in the wildernes of Western Oklahoma, little dreaming of the swift and terrible vengeance which would follow. The time for temporizing was at last past. General Sheridan, who was in command, determined not only to pursue and punish the marauders, but, if necessary, he proposed to carry on the campaign in winter,* a policy which was without precedent in the history of warfare

GEN. GEORGE A. CUSTER

the Solomon Valley. Maj. E. W. Wynkoop, who was agent of the Cheyenne and Arapaho at the time, always contended that Black Kettle was in camp near the agency on Pawnee Fork (Fort Larned) at the time of the Solomon Valley raid. Agent Murphy, of the Osage, and other plainsmen always claimed that Black Kettle was a man of peace and well disposed towards the whites. Black Kettle had narrowly escaped with his life on the occasion of the Chivington massacre, on Sand Creek, in Colorado, in November, 1864. At the Fort Harker council, in the winter of 1866-7, Black Kettle pleaded eloquently against the extension of the "iron road" across the Plains. He said it would "drive away the buffalo and leave the red children of the Great Father at Washington to starve." At the time of his death, Black Kettle was wearing a silver medal which had been presented to one of his ancestors by the Indian peace commissioners of the United States government during the administration of President Washington.

*The Indians of the Plains never made war in winter. In all their movements they were dependent upon their horses. These, during the winter and early spring, had nothing to eat except dry grass and the bark of cottonwood and willow trees. Consequently, they were too thin and weak for the exertions of Indian warfare until comparatively late in the season. It was for this reason that the Indians of the Plains made war only in the latter part of the summer and early autumn. Naturally, the troops of the Regular Army had made war on the Indians only when the latter were hostile. It was this well established precedent which General Sheridan proposed to disregard.

on the Plains. Careful preparations were made. Governor Crawford of Kansas, was asked to furnish a regiment of volunteer cavalry, which was promptly raised and mustered into the United States service (the 19th Kansas). This, with the 7th Regiment of U. S. Cavalry, composed the force with which it was planned to punish and overawe the hostile Indians. General Sheridan, with the 7th U. S. Cavalry, of which General Custer* was in immediate command, moved southward from Fort Hays to Fort Dodge, while the 19th Kansas Cavalry was to march direct from Topeka to the rendezvous in Northwestern Oklahoma, which was established where Beaver and Wolf Creeks join to form the North Canadian River.†

MAJ. J. H. ELLIOTT

152. Battle of the Washita. —The Kansas Regiment having been delayed by a heavy snow storm, General Custer, with the 7th Cavalry, pushed on, found the Cheyenne camp on the Washita, attacked it at daylight (November 27, 1868), killing Black Kettle and almost annihilating his band. Custer's victory was as complete as it had

CAPT. LOUIS McL. HAMILTON

*George A. Custer was born at New Rumley, Ohio, in 1839. He was appointed a cadet at the U. S. Military Academy from Michigan and graduated in 1861, just at the beginning of the Civil War. He was in the active service all through that conflict, winning promotion through all of the grades to that of major general of volunteers. In the re-organization of the Regular Army, in 1866, he was commissioned lieutenant colonel of the 7th Cavalry. His ten years of service in that capacity terminated with his death in the fight on the Little Bighorn, June 25, 1876.

†The camp at that place was named Camp Supply because of the large amount of forage and provisions which was brought there to

been spectacular.* His own loss was comparatively small in numbers.† He had to retire quickly, however, as he found the Washita Valley full of Indian camps for miles below—hostile Kiowa, Comanche and other bands of Cheyenne.§ Custer's victory on the Washita was the beginning of the end of Indian wars on the Southern Plains, including Western Oklahoma.** Although there were intermittent hostilities

be used as a base of operations. It eventually became a regular military post, being continuously garrisoned until it was abandoned in 1891. It is now occupied as a state hospital for the insane.

*When the charge was sounded the regimental band began playing "Garry Owen."

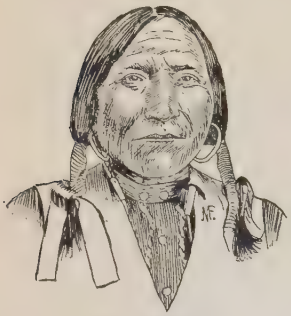
†Among the brave men whose life blood reddened the snow in the valley of the Washita on that bleak November morning, were Maj. Joel H. Elliott and Capt. Louis McLane Hamilton. The latter was a grandson of Alexander Hamilton, an officer of the Revolutionary Army and first Secretary of the Treasury in President Washington's Cabinet. Captain Hamilton's ancestry was equally distinguished on his mother's side. His maternal grandfather, Louis McLane, was a native of Delaware and a son of Col. Allen McLane, of the Continental Army. Louis McLane passed a large part of his life in the public service, having been a representative and senator in Congress, United States Minister to Great Britain, and (during Andrew Jackson's administration) Secretary of the Treasury, and then Secretary of State. Captain Hamilton had been detailed to command the force left to guard Custer's wagon train, but he begged so hard to be allowed to go on with the command that another officer was substituted and he was permitted to take part in the attack where he met his tragic fate. He was the youngest officer of his rank in the United States Army at the time of his death. He entered the volunteer military service before he was eighteen years old, was commissioned a lieutenant in the Regular Army a few months later and was in command of a company under fire before he was nineteen.

§Indeed, Custer all but entangled his command in the same kind of a hopeless predicament in which it was entrapped and exterminated in the Battle of the Little Bighorn, eight years later. Had he struck the valley of the Washita four or five miles lower it is probable that it might have been very difficult, if not impossible, to retire to Camp Supply.

**This affair took place a short distance above the site upon which the town of Cheyenne was founded nearly twenty-four years afterward. With the snow nearly a foot deep and the weather bitterly cold, Custer's squadrons were assigned to positions surrounding the Cheyenne village, while its herd of horses was captured before the Indians dreamed of the presence of an enemy. After the fight was over, the lodges, lodge poles and other property of the Indians were piled up and burned, and some seven hundred horses and ponies, which were not needed for the transportation of prisoners, were killed.

in that region during the ensuing six years, yet the Indians never again showed the same degree of spirit and unity in their warlike demonstrations.

153. **The End of the Campaign.**—After a few days of rest at Camp Supply, the 19th Kansas Regiment having arrived in the meantime, the command thus re-enforced again moved over to the Washita, whence the bodies of several of the dead were removed for burial at Fort Arbuckle. All of the hostile camps had vanished. The column then moved down the Washita Valley to Fort Cobb.* From that post the command marched a month later to Camp Wichita,† at the eastern base of the Wichita Mountains. Thence, turning westward, the expedition, under the command of General Custer, skirted the southern base of



LONE WOLF

*Marching down the valley toward Fort Cobb, the command met a large party of Kiowa Indians, headed by their war chiefs, Lone Wolf and Satanta. These Kiowa professed to be friendly and peaceable and readily consented to accompany the command to Fort Cobb. It was soon noticeable, however, that one at a time, and on various pretexts, they dropped out of the column and slipped away, until only the two chiefs were left. When they sought to make excuse for leaving, they were detained as prisoners and hostages. They promised faithfully that the whole tribe would come to Fort Cobb at once and make arrangements to settle down on the reservation. From day to day this action was deferred on various pretexts, however. General Sheridan was in no humor to temporize. He accordingly gave orders to the effect that, if the Kiowa did not come in by sun down the next day, Lone Wolf and Satanta should be hung and troops sent in pursuit of the village. Satanta's son, who was present, was sent as a messenger to the tribe. The head of the Kiowa cavalcade arrived at Fort Cobb shortly after noon the next day, and the whole tribe arrived before night.

†Since known as Fort Sill. Camp Wichita had been established by troops under the command of Colonel Benjamin H. Grierson, 10th U. S. Cavalry, in the summer of 1868. On the arrival of General Sheridan, in January, 1869, he caused it to be re-named, calling it Fort Sill, in honor of General Joshua W. Sill, who had been a classmate of his at West Point and who commanded a brigade in Sheridan's division for a time during the Civil War. General Sill was killed in action at Stone River, Tennessee, December 31, 1862.

the Wichita Mountains, ascended the valley of the Salt Fork of the Red River into the Texas Panhandle in search of the hostile Cheyenne. Returning toward Camp Supply, a hostile village was found on Sweetwater Creek, in Roger Mills county. Capturing three of the Cheyenne chiefs by ruse, Custer compelled them to bring in several white captives and surrender them, threatening the chiefs with death if his demand did not meet with prompt compliance.* The campaign being thus closed, the command returned to Camp Supply, and the hope that peace might some day reign on the Plains began to bloom into a reality.† While it is true that perfect peace was not established until six years later, it is also a fact that

YELLOW BEAR

*From Fort Cobb, General Sheridan sent Iron Shirt, a Kiowa chief, as a peace messenger to the Cheyenne and Arapaho, which were supposed to be encamped near the head of the Washita, in the region of the Staked Plains. At the end of three weeks, Iron Shirt returned and, shortly afterward, Little Robe, a prominent Cheyenne chief, and Yellow Bear, second chief of the Arapaho, arrived in camp. With a small escort of but forty men, General Custer then went westward, accompanied by Little Robe and Yellow Bear, in an endeavor to meet the Cheyenne and Arapaho and persuade them to come in for council. The Arapaho, under the leadership of their head chief, Little Raven, were found encamped in the Red River country near the Texas line. Although outnumbered by Indian warriors, ten to one, General Custer and his party fearlessly entered the Arapaho camp, relying implicitly on the good faith of Yellow Bear, nor was the confidence and trust misplaced. A council was held, the result being that the Arapaho readily agreed to move over to Fort Sill for conference with General Sheridan.

†When Custer came up to the Indian village the troops were anxious to make an attack. Custer restrained them and asked for a council with the chiefs. By his direction, other officers and soldiers gathered around the powwow and then, at a word of command, arrested the chiefs. Custer's tone and manner instantly changed. He told them that they held some white women as prisoners who must be delivered to him. They had denied this before, but now said that the prisoners were at another camp fifteen miles

there was never another war against the whites in which all of the tribes of that region took part.

DULL KNIFE, BIG HEAD AND FAT BEAR
(From Photograph Taken at Camp Supply, 1869)

down the creek. Custer told them to tell their people to move their camp down to the other one at once, and informed them that he would follow with the troops the next day. When the troops followed, the next day, it was was noticed that the trail of the moving Indian village soon began to grow dim. Most of the Indians had scattered, and with them was going the prospect of peace and of rescuing of the white captives. At the end of a fifteen-mile march the site of an old Indian camp was found, but it had been abandoned for at least two months, and no Indians were near. General Custer promptly resorted to the use of the same expedient by which General Sheridan had compelled the unwilling Kiowa to come in—he threatened to hang the three captive chiefs, Dull Knife, Fat Bear and Big Head, unless the white women were brought in and released from captivity by sundown the day following. The threat proved effective. When the troops paraded at sunset, the following evening, the two women, who had been thus released from an awful bondage, stood before the tent, which had been assigned to them, while the regimental band of the 7th Cavalry played "Home, Sweet Home."

CHAPTER XI

(1870 - 1875)

Plains Tribes on the Warpath (Continued).

154.

PROGRESS Toward Peace.—Some of the Indians of the Plains, including the Arapaho, the Apache and the Penetetka band of the Comanche, were disposed to accept the terms of the treaties made at the mouth of the Little Arkansas (1865) and on the Medicine Lodge (1867) and live in peace.* The Cheyenne, the Kiowa, and a part of the Comanche came in to the agencies to receive supplies of food and blankets. The Quahada band of Comanche, absolutely refusing to come to the agency or to be bound by any treaty of peace, remained out on the Plains, in the Texas Panhandle country, from which they continued to raid ranches and stage stations on the overland trails and also the frontier settlements in Texas. This hostile Quahada camp was the rendezvous or gathering place of the dissatisfied and warlike spirits of the Cheyenne and Kiowa, which tribes were not openly hostile for several years im-

MOW-A-WAY

*In 1869 Mow-a-way, a Comanche chief, was captured by General Getty at the head of a party of young men. Under military escort the prisoners were sent from Fort Bascom across the Plains to Fort Leavenworth. In recounting his experience and observations on that trip in after years, Mow-a-way said: "I supposed when we started that the soldiers were taking us away off to be killed, but we traveled on, day after day, in the wagons and were kindly treated. When one of the Indians was taken sick I supposed the white men would be glad to see him die, but instead they doctored him and did all they could to cure him. When he

mediately following the winter campaign of 1868-9. Many of the Indians were sullen and defiant in their demeanor.

---

died, they did not throw him out in the grass for the wolves to eat, as I expected they would, but the commanding officer sent some men to dig a grave for him. They made a box and put him into it with all of his clothes, his bow and arrows; everything he owned they gave him. The hole that they dug was the nicest one that I ever saw. They made a little mound over him, smooth and nice. I could not understand why such mean people, as I thought the white people were, should be so kind to an Indian in sickness and after death.

"When we had traveled many days we came to where there was a new kind of road that I had never heard of. There was a very large iron horse hitched to several houses on wheels. We were taken into one of them, which was the nicest house I ever saw. There were seats on each side of it. As soon as we were seated the iron horse made a snort, and away it went, pulling the houses! Our ponies could not run half so fast. It only ran a little while till it made a big snort and stopped at another white man's village. The iron horse kept running, and snorting, and stopping at the white man's villages, and the villages kept getting larger and larger. I had no idea that the white man had so many villages and that there were so many white men. At length we reached Leavenworth, which was the largest of any of the villages. There the people were so many and the land so scarce that they build one house on top of another, two or three houses (stories) high. These houses were divided into little houses (rooms) inside. The houses were built close together on both sides of the road. They were full of people, and the roads between the houses were full of people. I know not where they all came from, but I saw them with my own eyes. I had no idea there were so many white people in the world.

"After we were taken over one of the houses built on top of another, we were taken into a house in the ground right under the other one. There was no one living in it, but there were barrels of foolish water (whiskey) in it. There was some of it offered to me to drink, but I saw that it made white men foolish who drank it, and I was afraid to take any, for fear I would get as foolish as they did.

"We were taken into a house that was built on the water (steamboat) and it could swim everywhere. It made no difference how deep the water was, it could swim. There is where the sugar comes from. I saw the men rolling great big barrels of sugar out of the house on the water, and so many of them! Nobody need talk to me about sugar being scarce after seeing the large amount come out of the house that was swimming on the water."

After being at Fort Leavenworth for some time Mow-a-way and his party were sent back to Fort Sill, where they reported themselves to Colonel Grierson as prisoners to be released from custody, and ever after Mow-a-way was a man of peace and a true friend of the white man.

This was particularly true of the Kiowa, which tribe was attached to the agency at Fort Sill.*

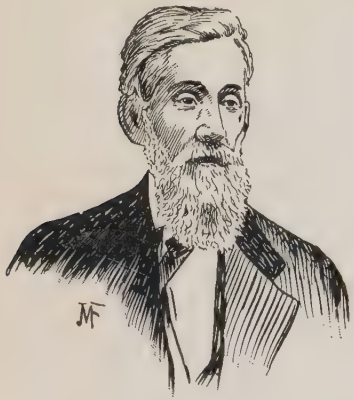
155. **The First Railways.**—June 6, 1870, the first railway to enter the Indian Territory (the Missouri, Kansas & Texas) began laying its track southward from the Kansas boundary in the valley of the Neosho River.† Its construction was rapidly pushed, southward and southwestward, across the Cherokee, Creek and Choctaw Nations and thence across the Red River into Texas.§ The building of that first line of railway led to the opening of the first coal mine at the town of McAlester. The Atlantic & Pacific Railway built its line across the Shawnee and Wyandotte reservations, entering the Cherokee Nation and effecting a junction with the Missouri, Kansas & Texas, at Vinita, in 1872.

*It soon came to the knowledge of Lawrie Tatum, their new Quaker agent, that some of the Kiowa and Comanche were holding as prisoners women and children who had been captured either in the white settlements on the frontiers of Kansas and Texas, on the immigrant trails, or in New Mexico. The Indians at first denied having any such prisoners, then demanded that they be ransomed. Agent Tatum, with paternal sternness, refused to consider such terms. He told the Indians that he would neither reward them for wrongdoing nor pay them for doing what was just and right. He demanded that the captives be brought to the agency at once and released, at the same time informing the Indians that he would issue no more rations or supplies to them until they complied. In every case the Indians showed signs of great displeasure and threatened to become unruly, but in the end the inexorable firmness of the quiet and determined agent triumphed, all of the captives being finally brought in and released. Prior to the inauguration of such a policy by Agent Tatum, the Indians of the Plains had generally exacted ransom for prisoners in goods to the value of from $100.00 to $1,500.00 each.

†Congress had passed an act, (approved July 25, 1866,) granting a conditional right of way across the Indian Territory from Kansas to Texas to the railway company which should be the first to complete its track to the state boundary line in the valley of the Neosho. An exciting race by the track layers of two rival companies took place during the early part of 1870, ending in a victory for the Missouri, Kansas & Texas.

§During the building of this road, at the end of the line where track laying was in progress, there was generally a settlement of tents and shanties where the vicious element of the frontier country congregated just as it did in the new towns that sprang suddenly into existence along the lines of other western railways which were built within that period, only that the Indian Territory "towns" were even less permanent.

156. **The Okmulgee Constitution.**—The continued agitation in Congress concerning the proposed organization of the Indian Territory into the Territory of Oklahoma finally had its effect on the Indians. Generally speaking, the Indians of the Five Civilized Tribes were very conservative, but few of them following the radically progressive leadership of Boudinot. Not unmindful of the possibility of changes which, to them, seemed revolutionary, a general inter-tribal council of the Indians was held at Okmulgee, December 5-11, 1870. After serious deliberation, it was almost unanimously voted to appoint a committee of twelve for the purpose of drafting a constitution for a confederation of the tribes of the Indian Territory. This committee, of which William P. Ross,* of the Cherokee Nation, was chairman, proceeded at once to the performance of the duty assigned it. The completed instrument, which was republican in form and not in con-



WILLIAM P. ROSS

*William Potter Ross was born at the foot of Lookout Mountain, in Tennessee, August 28, 1820. His father was a native of Scotland and his mother was mixed white and Cherokee Indian descent. His early education was obtained partly in the Presbyterian mission school at Will's Valley, Alabama, and the Greenville (Tennessee) Academy. His preparation for college was finished at the Hamil School, Lawrenceville, New Jersey. He then entered Princeton, from which he graduated with honor in 1842. In 1843 he was elected clerk of the Cherokee Senate. In 1844 he was selected as first editor of the Cherokee Advocate, and subsequently served in other public positions. He was a man of remarkably versatile attainments, eminent as a lawyer, interested in agriculture and horticulture and in the cause of education, a talented writer and an orator of power. After having served as a member of the Cherokee Senate and as a delegate to Washington, he was selected to succeed John Ross, as principal chief of the Cherokee Nation, after the death of the latter in 1866, and was later chosen for a second term. Sober, temperate and just, his character was one of unblemished integrity. He died at his Fort Gibson home, July 20, 1891.

flict with the existing treaties with the General Government, was promptly submitted to the several tribes for consideration. The Chickasaw Legislature, which was the first to take action, rejected the proposed constitution because it provided for proportional representation instead of equal representation in the inter-tribal legislative council. This unexpected opposition had the effect of checking interest and support among the other tribes, though the "Okmulgee Constitution," so-called, continued to be the subject of discussion for several years.*

GEN. WILLIAM T. SHERMAN

157. Peace Council at Anadarko.—After having remained nominally at peace with the whites for two years, the Kiowa prepared to take to the war path in the spring of 1871. At a council of the Five Civilized Tribes, held at Okmulgee in March of that year, the Indians of the wild tribes of the Plains were asked to join in a peace council. After some delays, this gathering took place at the Wichita agency (Anardarko) May 1, 1871.† Little came of this council.

158. Satanta's Raid.—While the peace council was in

*At that time there were said to be three parties or factions among the Five Civilized Tribes, namely, (1st) the small party of radicals which followed the leadership of such men as Boudinot and Tandy Walker and favored opening the country, at least in part, to white settlement; (2d and largest,) those who favored the Okmulgee Constitution but no white settlement, and (3d) the ultra-conservative element, which wanted no change at all.

†The tribes represented at the peace council were the Cherokee, Creek, Chickasaw, Seminole, Delaware, Shawnee, Caddo, Wichita, Comanche, Kiowa, Apache of the Plains, Cheyenne and Arapaho. The pipe of peace was smoked, and many of the chiefs addressed the council. Several of the most prominent Kiowa chiefs were conspicuous by their absence.

session, a war party of Kiowa, under the leadership of Satanta, was on a raid into Texas, where they attacked a Government freighting train, killing the trainmaster and six teamsters. Gen. William T. Sherman, commander of the United States Army, who was at a military post (Fort Richardson) only a few miles distant from the scene of this attack, came to Fort Sill shortly afterward in an endeavor to find the Indians who committed this hostile act. When the Kiowa came to the agency to draw rations a few days later, Agent Tatum asked what Indians made the raid into Texas. Satanta proudly boasted that he had led the marauding party himself.* At the request of Agent Tatum, Colonel Grierson,† in command at Fort Sill, caused

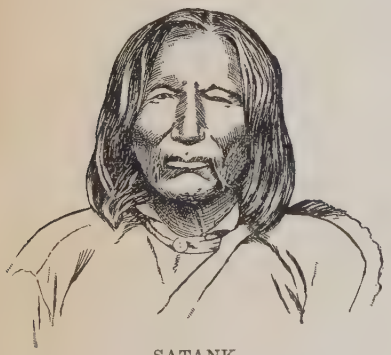
SATANTA

*Satanta's statement is as follows: "Yes, I led that raid. I have often asked for arms and ammunition, which have not been furnished. I have made many other requests which have not been granted. You do not listen to my talk. The white people are preparing to build a railroad through our country, which will not be permitted. Some years ago they took us by the hair and pulled us here close to Texas, where we have to fight them. More recently I was arrested and confined for several days, but that is played out now. There will never be any more Kiowa Indians arrested. I want you to remember that. On account of these grievances, a short time ago I took about a hundred of my warriors to Texas to teach them how to fight. I also took the chiefs, Satank, Eagle Heart, Big Bow, Big Tree and Fast Bear. We found a mule train, which we captured and killed seven men. Two of our men were killed, too, but we are willing to call it even. It is all over now, and it is not necessary to say much more about it. We don't expect to do any raiding around here this summer, but we do expect to raid in Texas. If any other Indian claims the honor of leading that party, he is lying to you. I led it myself."

†Benjamin H. Grierson was born at Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania, July 8, 1826. He entered the military service in 1861 as aide-de-camp

the arrest of Satanta, Satank and Big Tree. A day or two later these chiefs were taken to Texas to be tried for murder.* The trial of Satanta and Big Tree, which was held at Jacksboro, Texas, resulted in verdicts of murder in the first degree and they were sentenced to be hanged on the first of the following September. This sentence was commuted to life imprisonment. The effect on the Kiowa Indians was very marked. They restored several captive white children and a large number of horses and mules which they had stolen, and, for the time being, remained very close to the reservation.

GEN. B. H. GRIERSON



SATANK

159. Peace Council at Fort Cobb.—The Five Civilized Tribes held another general council at Okmulgee in the spring of 1872. Again a delegation was selected for a peace council with the wild tribes of the Plains. It was proposed to hold it at Fort Cobb on July 22, 1872. It was not held until some days later on account of the non-arrival of the Kiowa Indians. The peace council did not bear much fruit in the way of prac-

to Gen. B. M. Prentis. In October, following, he was commissioned major to the 6th Illinois Cavalry, and was successively promoted to the grades of colonel and brigadier general during the next two years. After the war closed he was brevetted major general for meritorious service and commissioned colonel of the 10th U. S. Calvary, which he commanded until April, 1890, when he was promoted to brigadier general. He was retired because of age in July, 1890. General Grierson selected the site upon which Fort Sill was afterward built. He is living in retirement (1908) at Jacksonville, Illinois.

*The escort was composed of troops of the 4th U. S. Cavalry, under Colonel R. S. McKenzie, who was in command at Fort Rich-

tical results, despite the plain-spoken but friendly advice of the representatives of the Five Civilized Tribes, who again warned the Kiowa that it was time for them "to turn into the bright path of peace."*

160. Delegation of Indians Agree to Visit Washington.— A few weeks after the peace council at Fort Cobb, a Government Commission visited the agencies at Darlington, Anadarko and Fort Sill for the purpose of investigation. The members of the Commission were Professor Edward Parrish,† of Pennsylvania, and Captain Henry E. Alvord,§ of Massachusetts. One of the objects of the Commission was to secure the consent of a delegation of representative men of the tribes attached to these agencies to go to Washington. The Kiowa were exceedingly reluctant to send

BIG TREE

ardson, Texas. Satanta and Big Tree rode in one wagon, and Satank, who was so refractory that he had to be shackled, rode in another with two soldiers to guard him. After going a short distance he said to George Washington, (a Caddo Indian who was riding beside the wagon,) "I wish to send a little message to my people by you. Tell my people that I am dead. I died the first day out from Fort Sill. My bones will be lying beside the road. I wish my people to gather them up and take them home." He then began to chant his death song, with his back turned to the guard, at the same time pulling the shackles from his hands, tearing part of the skin from them in the effort. Then, with a knife which he had secreted, (although he had been twice searched) he started for his guards in the front of the wagon. Both jumped out leaving their guns. Satank picked up one of the guns, intending to kill one more man, but was shot by some of the other soldiers. He was buried by the soldiers at Fort Sill.

*The irreconcilable portion of the Kiowa, under the leadership of Lone Wolf, demanded the release of Satanta and Big Tree before they would even consider a peace proposition. That part of the tribe which followed the leadership of Kicking Bird was much more favorably disposed toward peace.

†Professor Parrish was taken sick shortly after his arrival at Fort Sill, with an attack of typhoid fever, which caused his death at that place September 9, 1872.

§Captain Henry E. Alvord, many years later (1894-5) was president of the Oklahoma Agricultural and Mechanical College, at Stillwater, Oklahoma.

such a delegation but finally consented.* While at Washington, the Kiowa delegation was promised the release of Satanta and Big Tree, by the permission of the Governor of Texas, at the end of six months, upon certain conditions, one of which was to be the continued good behavior of the whole tribe during that time.†

161. The Defeat of the Quahada.—The Quahada band of Comanche, which, under the leadership of Tab-a-nan-a-ka, for nearly five years had refused to be bound by the terms of the treaty on the Medicine Lodge, remained off of the reservation and out on the Plains. In the Fall of 1872, Colonel R. S. McKenzie,§ with a force of troops, followed a raiding party until he found and surprised them in camp. Most of the Comanche fled, only a few being killed. The camp, including lodges, dried meat and other belongings of the Indians, was destroyed and the women and

GEN. R. S. McKENZIE

*One of the conditions under which the Kiowa agreed to send a delegation to Washington was that its members should be permitted to see Satanta and Big Tree. For this purpose the two imprisoned chieftains were taken from the Texas penitentiary to St. Louis, Missouri, where they were met by their fellow tribesmen of the delegation which was en route to Washington. Captain Alvord reported the meeting between Satanta and Big Tree and the members of the delegation as "proving to be a most impressive and affecting occasion."

†Thomas C. Battey, a Quaker school teacher, was employed in conducting a school at the Fort Sill Agency. Kicking Bird asked him to go out to the camp of his band and conduct a school. Agent Tatum favored the plan, and the Commissioner of Indian Affairs finally approved of it. In December, 1872, he went out to the Kiowa camp to open a school for the children of Indians, who were still living in a state of primitive savagery. He was supplied with a wagon and a long tent, which was used as a school room. With this equipment Battey accompanied the Kiowa in the frequent changes of their village location during a period of over eighteen months. As an educational experiment it was not a pronounced success, but the presence of the kind-hearted and peaceful teacher among them had a splendid effect upon the restless and turbulent spirits of the Kiowa.

§Ranald Slidell McKenzie was born July 27, 1840, in Westchester County, New York. He graduated from the U. S. Military Acad-

children were taken as prisoners to Fort Richardson, Texas. Part of the Quahada Comanche then came to the agency for the first time. They wanted their women and children restored, but Agent Tatum* required that they first surrender all of the white captives held by them, which they did with great reluctance.

162. Outlaws Active in the Indian Territory.—The lawless element was never more numerous and active in the Indian country than it was during the ten years immediately following the Civil War. Horse thieves, whiskey peddlers, gamblers and sharpers continually intruded upon the reservations, ever ready to prey upon the Indians. The white hunters killed thousands of buffalo for the mere wanton "sport" of killing, despite the protests of the Indians and the promises of the Government peace commissioners to the contrary. The raids of white horse thieves and the wholesale slaughter of the buffalo angered the Indians to the point of hostility and was a contributing cause to more than one outbreak. Thus, the innocent settlers on the frontiers of Kansas and Texas suffered on account of the misdeeds of outlaws and renegades in the Indian country.

---

emy at West Point in 1862, and immediately entered the active service in the Civil War, which was then in progress, reaching the rank of brigadier general of volunteers before its close. In the reorganization of the regular army he was commissioned colonel of the 4th Cavalry. He was promoted to brigadier general in 1882 and retired two years later on account of disabilities. He died in 1889. His father was Alexander Slidell, an officer in the U. S. Navy, who assumed the name of McKenzie at the instance of a maternal uncle. John Slidell, who was a senator from Louisiana and who became famous as one of the Confederate commissioners who were removed from the British steamer Trent, by Captain Wilkes, of the U. S. Navy, was a brother of Colonel McKenzie's father.

*About the time that the campaign on the Washita was in progress, a committee representing the Society of Friends, called on Gen. U. S. Grant, who had recently been elected to the presidency, and asked him to consider the propriety of appointing religious men as Indian agents—agents who would, as far as possible, secure upright, moral men as agency employees—in the certain belief that the effect on the Indians would be much better than that which commonly prevailed at the time. After listening to the deputation with great interest, General Grant replied: "Gentlemen, your advice is good. Now give me the names of some Friends for

163. A Season of Unrest.—In the spring of 1873, the Cheyenne decided to "dig up the tomahawk" and go on the war path. The Kiowa and Comanche were asked to join them, but the Kiowa were on their good behavior pending the promised release of their imprisoned cheiftains. as well as on account of the pacific influence of Kicking Bird.* The Comanche were also remaining quietly on the reservation hoping to secure the release of the captive women and children of the Quahada band. These were brought to Fort Sill under military escort, July 10, 1873, and restored to their relatives and friends, who were much rejoiced. The release of Satanta and Big Tree was delayed several months because of misunderstandings between the Federal authorities and the governor of Texas. Finally, Governor Davis came to Fort Sill, Satanta and Big Tree being brought at the same time to that post and confined in the

KICKING BIRD

Indian agents and I will appoint them. Let us have peace." Such ready acquiescence to the spirit of their petition from the victorious warrior was a real surprise to the peaceful followers of Fox. As the result of their recommendations, President Grant appointed ten Friends, (or Quakers) as Indian agents in the spring of 1869. Among these were Lawrie Tatum, agent for the Comanche, Kiowa and Apache; Brinton Darlington, agent for the Cheyenne and Arapaho; and Thomas Miller, agent for the Sac and Fox, Absentee Shawnee, Pottawatomie and Kickapoo. Quaker agents were also appointed for Wichita, Caddo and affiliated tribes the Kansas (or Kaw), and the Osage in 1870-71-72.

*Kicking Bird died May 3, 1875, at which time he was the leading chief and most influential counselor in the Kiowa tribe, although then of only middle age. During the last six years of his life his voice and example were always on the side of right and peace. At the time of his death permanent peace had been established between the people of his own and neighboring tribes and the whites, and this consummation of his earnest desire, due, as it was, in no small degree to his own noble example and patient efforts, was a source of great satisfaction to him.

guard house. United States Commissioner of Indian Affairs E. P. Smith was also present. After considerable negotiation it was finally agreed to release the two prisoners on parole during good behavior.

164. The Last General Outbreak in Oklahoma.—Almost immediately after the release of Satanta and Big Tree, some of the Indians began raiding ranches and settlements again, though Kicking Bird and most of the Comanche chiefs restrained their young men from such acts. In the spring of 1874 most of the Cheyenne and Comanche and part of the Kiowa "smoked the war-pipe" together. The Arapaho under the leadership of Little Raven, and other southwestern Indians refused to join them. Strong pressure was brought to bear upon the rest of the Kiowa, Comanche and Cheyenne to join in the war which followed. Part of the Kiowa under Lone Wolf did so, but the greater portion remained at peace under the influence of Kicking Bird. Whirlwind, the head chief of the Cheyenne, and White Shield, one of the leading chiefs, went to the agency at Darlington at the first sign of hostility, and it was through their persuasion that Little Robe and his band reported at the agency sometime afterward.

LITTLE RAVEN

WHIRLWIND

165. The Fight at Adobe Walls.—The hostiles engaged in raiding ranches and running off stock during the early part of the summer. A party of buffalo hunters had taken refuge at a trading post called Adobe Walls, on the South Canadian, a few miles west of the Oklahoma boundary, June 25, 1874. There they were attacked by a party of seven hundred hos-

tiles under the leadership of Quanah (since better known as Quanah Parker, now principal chief of the Comanche). The Indians repeatedly charged the defensive position of the hunters, only to be repulsed with heavy loss, and finally retired in defeat.

166. **Death of Pat Hennessey.**—July 3, 1874, a wagon train on the Chisholm Trail was attacked, presumably by Cheyenne

PAT HENNESSEY'S GRAVE

warriors, a few miles north of the Cimarron crossing.* Patrick Hennessey, the train-master, after making a brave attempt to stand off the assailants, during which his three

*It was always claimed by some, who were well informed, that the Hennessey massacre was committed by white outlaws, who were disguised as Indians. Hennessey was buried near the spot where he met his tragic death. In after years, when the Oklahoma country was settled in a day, a town was built near by, and, very appropriately, named Hennessey. It is situated in the northern part of Kingfisher county.

teamsters were killed, was taken, tied to a wagon wheel and burned alive. The Cheyenne from the Darlington agency raided as far north as the valley of the Republican River, in Northern Kansas, in 1874.* August 22, a party of hostile Kiowa and Comanche attacked the Wichita agency, killing several people and burning part of the buildings.† During the summer the forces of the regular army, under the command of Lieut. Col. John W. Davidson of the 10th U. S. Cavalry, were kept constantly on the move in an attempt to overtake and check the hostiles, but with very indifferent results.

167. A Winter Campaign.—With the arrival of autumn, when the Indians wanted to quit the war-path on their own terms and go to the agencies to draw rations and annuity goods, they found the tables turned. During the exceptionally severe winter which followed, the hostile Comanche and Cheyenne were kept constantly on the move, three squadrons of cavalry and one battalion of infantry under the command

*When the Cheyenne warriors left their reservation, the Osage were out on the Plains on a buffalo hunt. Their agent, I. T. Gibson, sent messages to the Osage hunting parties, directing that they return at once to the agency. Before they could do so they met a party of forty white men, who were eager to avenge some of the savage misdeeds of the Cheyenne in Kansas. Four of the Osage who went to meet the party of white men were shot down in cold blood without the slightest provocation. The rest of the Osage, men, women and children, hurriedly jumped on ponies and fled amid a shower of bullets, leaving sixty horses and mules, camp, provisions, and other property, none of which was ever recovered. The white men concerned in this affair then rushed to the governor of Kansas, who gave authority to have them mustered into the state militia, dating the papers back to legalize what was, in effect, a brutal massacre. It is little wonder that many of the relatives of the Indians thus killed could scarcely be restrained from going to the vicinity of the tragedy and wreaking their vengeance on innocent people. In his efforts to prevent such an attempt, Agent Gibson was ably seconded by Che-sho-how-ka, an Osage chief, who offered his life after having given his favorite horse and his chief money to the relatives of the murdered Indians to dissuade them from their vengeful purpose.

†Satanta violated his parole pledge by leaving the agency without permission. He was later arrested at Darlington and returned to the Texas penitentiary, where, several years afterward, he committed suicide.

of Col. Nelson A. Miles,* following them incessantly, giving them no time to rest. The terms which were dictated by the military authorities were those of unconditional surrender. The men were put in prison, the chiefs being chained. They had to give up all of their arms as well as their horses and mules.† A part of the hostile Quahada Comanche, one hundred and eighty-five in number, were induced to come to the agency and surrender at midwinter.§ Small parties of the Cheyenne came in to the agency at Darlington and surrendered themselves as prison-

GEN. NELSON A. MILES

*Nelson A. Miles was born at Westminster, Massachusetts, August 8, 1839. He entered the volunteer military service in 1861, and was promoted through all of the grades to that of major general. When the Regular Army was reorganized he was commissioned colonel, first of the 40th Infantry and afterwards of the 5th Infantry. Colonel Miles eventually reached the grade of lieutenant general and was in command of the United States Army when he retired in 1905.

†Seven hundred and sixty of the Kiowa and Comanche horses and mules were shot, one hundred head were given to the Tonkawa Indians of Texas, who served as guides and trailers with the soldiers, five hundred and fifty were given to the white military scouts. The remainder were sold at auction at from three to six dollars per head. Even at that low price the confiscated Kiowa and Comanche stock brought $22,000.00, which was invested in cattle and sheep for their benefit.

§General Miles had occasion to send dispatches to Fort Supply from his camp on McClellan Creek. A detachment of six troopers and scouts was selected for the purpose. After a hard night's ride, the party was suddenly attacked by a band of one hundred Comanche and Kiowa warriors near the Washita River. At the first fire one of the couriers fell from his horse badly wounded. The rest abandoned their horses and took refuge in a buffalo wallow a hundred yards distant. With their knives they deepened the depression until it afforded a measure of protection. Then Amos Chapman, the scout, who had been slightly wounded himself, told the others to stand off the Indians while he made a rush for the purpose of bringing in their fallen comrade. Laying down his rifle, he sprang out of the buffalo wallow and ran with great speed to where the wounded trooper lay. The latter was a large man and difficult to lift. Chapman laid down and succeeded in getting the wounded man on his back. Slowly rising to his feet with his helpless burden, Chap-

ers of war during the fall of 1874, but it was not until March 6, 1875, that the main body of the Cheyenne, under Gray Beard, Heap-o'-Birds, Stone Calf and Bull Bear surrendered to Col. Thomas H. Neil, of the 6th U. S. Cavalry, near the agency,* and the last of the Quahada Comanche under Quanah† went to Fort Sill, where they surrendered to Col. R. S. McKenzie, June 2, 1875.

QUANAH PARKER

168. Peace Restored.—In April, 1875, the prisoners were released, being turned over to their respective tribal agents, with the exception of the leaders, who were to be punished by further im-

man started back to the place of refuge. Then the hostiles charged. Chapman's comrades opened a brisk fire on them, driving most of them back, but one of them, more daring than the rest, rode close up behind him as he ran and fired. Chapman fell, with the wounded man on top of him. Quickly rising, he succeeded in carrying the wounded man into the buffalo wallow. Then it was that he learned his own leg had been shot off just above the ankle, and that he had finished his errand of mercy and help on the maimed stump with his foot dragging behind. The besieged couriers were finally rescued by the arrival of a cavalry force sufficiently strong to drive the Indians away. A medal of honor was afterward bestowed upon Amos Chapman in recognition of his bravery in saving the life of a comrade.

*One of the results of the Indian outbreak of 1874 was the establishment of a military post near the Cheyenne and Arapaho Agency, in August of that year. It was named Fort Reno, in honor of Gen. Jesse L. Reno, who was killed in action at South Mountain, Maryland, September 14, 1862, while in command of the 9th Corps of the Union Army. Fort Reno was continuously garrisoned until after Oklahoma became a state.

†The mother of Quanah was Cynthia Ann Parker, a white woman, who, at the age of nine, was captured by the Comanche during one of their periodical raids among the settlements on the Texas frontier, in 1836. She grew to womanhood among the Comanche

prisonment. Of these last there were eighteen Comanche, twenty-six Kiowa, twenty-eight Cheyenne and two Arapaho.* These seventy-four prisoners were sent in irons to Fort Marion (St. Augustine), Florida, where they were under the care of Capt. R. H. Pratt of the 10th U. S. Cavalry.† Thus ended the last general Indian uprising in Western Oklahoma.

---

and became the wife of their great war chief, Peta Nocona. The chief was killed and Cynthia Ann Parker was captured with an infant daughter during a fight with a force of Texas Rangers under the command of Capt. L. S. Ross, in 1860. She was then restored to her relatives, by whom she was most kindly treated, but she constantly mourned for the people of her adoption, among whom her two sons were still living. She died, several years later, of a broken heart, it is said. Quanah was about eleven years old at the time his mother was captured by the Rangers. When he became old enough to be a warrior he soon developed the qualities of leadership and won rank as a chieftain through sheer force of character. He remained irreconcilably hostile to the white man until the final surrender in 1875. He then visited his mother's relatives in Texas and began to make an earnest and serious effort to prepare his people for the great change which, he foresaw, they would have to make. As he had been a leader in war, so he then became a counselor of peace and the ways of civilization, which he adopted. As such, his influence has extended far beyond the bounds of his own tribe. He may be rightly regarded as one of the remarkable men of his time.

*The two Arapaho prisoners were doubtless innocent, having been selected for punishment without any investigation of the charges against them. As a tribe the Arapaho had taken no part in the hostilities of the preceding year.

†During the time that the Indians were imprisoned at Fort Marion, Captain Pratt maintained a school for their instruction, and they also had the benefit of considerable missionary effort. At the end of the three years, when Captain Pratt was directed to return them to the West to be released and returned to their tribes, twenty-two of the younger Indians among them asked to be permitted to remain in the East to attend school. Seventeen of these entered Hampton Institute, at Newport News, Virginia, and the rest were scattered among other educational institutions. Later on, in 1879, Captain Pratt gathered a number of young Indians from various parts of the West in the abandoned cavalry barracks at Carlisle, Pennsylvania, and established the great Indian school which, for thirty years past, has wielded such a powerful influence in the final settlement of the Indian question.

Summary.—Because of the thrilling events which transpired in Oklahoma, and especially in the western portion, during the years between 1865 and 1875, and also because of the fame of some of the men who were connected with those events, that period of the history of Oklahoma will always have a most romantic interest to the people of the state. The annals of the Five Civilized Tribes during the same period are less exciting, as might be expected of a people who were recovering from the shock and exhaustion of participation in the Civil War.

Questions Concerning the Sixth Period

1. Briefly review the treaties by which the Five Civilized Tribes renewed their severed relations with the Federal government. Which treaty proposed to change the name of the Indian Territory to Oklahoma? What changes in the conditions formerly existing in the Territory were made possible by these treaties?

2. Locate by the map and tell briefly the story of the Chisholm Trail. What railway line was built over practically the same ground more than twenty years afterward?

3. What measures affecting the Indian Territory were proposed in Congress between 1865 and 1871? When was the practice of entering into treaties with the Indian tribes discontinued as a matter of policy by the Government? Why?

4. What great Indian peace council was held in the autumn of 1867? What tribes were represented? What was the result of the negotiations which were conducted there? Who were some of the famous men who attended that peace council?

5. What Indian raid was the occasion of the military campaign in the winter of 1868-9? Where was the Battle of Washita fought? Who commanded the troops in that engagement?

6. What did the Indians think of the probable number of white people? Tell Mow-a-way's story of his captivity, his treatment by the white men and what he saw on his journey while he was a prisoner. Why was he never again an enemy of the white men?

7. When were the first railways built in the Indian Territory?

8. What was the Okmulgee constitution? When and by whom was it formulated? How was it received and what were the results of the agitation?

9. What military posts were established in Oklahoma during this period? What posts were abandoned about the same time?

10. When did the last general Indian war occur in Oklahoma? How long did it last? What tribes took part in it?

SEVENTH PERIOD

(1875 - 1889)

CHAPTER XII

The Development and Sway of the Range Cattle Industry and the Agitation for the Opening of Oklahoma to Settlement

169.

THE Extermination of the Buffalo.—As long as there were countless thousands of buffalo roaming over the Great Plains, the Indians of that region were, to a large extent, independent of the white man and his government. So long as buffalo were slaughtered by Indians and white hunters only as they needed meat and robes, their numbers did not decrease very rapidly. The building of the first railways from the Missouri River westward to the Rocky Mountains, however, brought about a great change.* The transportation of buffalo skins and meat then became a simple matter and the hide hunter redoubled his efforts.† Moreover, the rail-

*The Union Pacific line was built up the valley of the Platte, in Nebraska, in 1866-67, and the Kansas Pacific was built up the valley of the Smoky Hill during the same years. The Santa Fe line was constructed up the valley of the Arkansas in 1871-73. All of these lines crossed the buffalo range.

†One firm shipped over two hundred thousand buffalo skins from Dodge City, Kansas, during the first twelve months after the construction of the railway to that point, and it is estimated that as many more were shipped from the same station by other firms or parties. While Dodge City was one of the greatest shipping points in the Great Plains region, there were a dozen other points on the Santa Fe Railway from which buffalo hides were shipped, and, of course, the numbers shipped from points on the Kansas Pacific and Union Pacific were correspondingly great.

road had made access to the buffalo range much easier for the so-called sportsman who killed for the mere wanton love of killing. The Indians had complained and protested

THE AMERICAN BISON, OR BUFFALO

against such reckless and indiscriminate slaughter but all to no purpose.* Thus, in the eight years which followed the

*In the autumn of 1867 Satanta escorted the members of the Peace Commission from Fort Larned to the valley of the Medicine Lodge, where the great peace council was held. Some of the white men who accompanied the party shot down some buffalo for mere sport, leaving the carcasses where they fell. Satanta, who was never backward in speech, strongly resented such an exhibition of wasteful folly by the white men. With flashing eyes and a scornful expression on his face he asked: "Has the white man become a child that he should kill and not eat? When the red men slay game they do so that they may live and not starve." This protest proved effective in that no more buffalo were killed for sport on that trip. At another time he said: "A long time ago this land belonged to our fathers, but when I go up the river I see camps of soldiers on its banks. These soldiers cut down my timber; they kill my buffalo, and when I see that my heart feels like bursting. I am sorry."

completion of the first railway lines across the Great Plains (1867-1875) the greed of the commercial hide hunter and the gloating of those who professed to kill for sport had done what thousands of savages had not done in ages—practically exterminated the buffalo.* That peace followed was not due altogether to force or persuasion. The Indians of the Plains, who had always relied upon the buffalo herds to supply them with food and clothing and shelter, were impelled by cold and hunger to report at their tribal agencies to draw rations and supplies of clothing.

170. **The Texas Cattle Trade.**—The close of the Civil War period found the ranges of Western Texas abounding with great herds of cattle.† At the same time the building of the railway lines westward toward the Rocky Mountains and the development of the meat packing industry at Chicago and other points, tempted the owners to seek a market for some of their surplus stock by driving it northward from Texas through the Indian Territory to some point on the railway line in Kansas. The first movement of range cattle from Texas grazed slowly northward through Oklahoma in 1866, the destination being Abilene, Kansas.§ By 1871 it was estimated that over six hundred thousand cattle were being driven

*A few small bands of buffalo lingered on for years after the main herds were gone. Their numbers were too few and they were too wary to make it worth while for either whites or Indians to hunt them. The last buffalo were reported in Beaver County in the winter of 1885-86, and there was still a small band running in the Texas Panhandle country as late as the summer of 1888.

†Texas had been a cattle country since the time that it formed a part of the dominion of Spain. During the Civil War it had been isolated from the rest of the Southern States by blockading squadrons and land forces, so that its herds increased very rapidly while there was no market or outlet for cattle.

§Ellsworth and Hays City succeeded Abilene as cattle shipping points on the Kansas Pacific. Later, when the Santa Fe Railway was built, Newton, Wichita and Dodge City successively became the cattle markets on that line. Large numbers of cattle were shipped from points on the Missouri, Kansas and Texas line, also. Eventually a large part of the southern cattle trade centered at Caldwell, Hunnewell and Kiowa, on the branch railway lines which came as far south as the boundary between Kansas and the Indian Territory.

northward from Texas each year. During the earlier years of the Texas cattle trade the herds had to cross Oklahoma near the center of the state on account of the hostility of the Indians of the wild tribes of the Plains. When the Indians became peaceable the cattle trails were moved farther west.

171. **The Range Cattle Industry.**—All of the Indian Territory was originally included in the range of the American

A HERD OF RANGE CATTLE

bison, or buffalo, as it was more commonly called. In the western half of the Territory, a land of prairies and plains, the buffalo were much more abundant than they ever were in the timbered regions farther east, and it was a part of what was more specifically called "the buffalo country." When the buffalo had about disappeared and the Indians had settled down to a quiet life on their reservations, the cattlemen crossed many parts of the Territory with their herds.

The nutritious grasses, on which mighty herds of buffalo had grazed, still grew luxuriantly and, apparently, there was every reason to believe that they would just as readily support herds of range cattle. The stock men were not long in noting an opportunity for the development of the range cattle industry in such a promising field. Soon cattle ranches began to appear, lands being leased from the Indian reservations at prices that were little more than nominal. Unassigned lands were quietly occupied without waiting for permission. During the years between the close of the last general Indian outbreak (1875), and the beginning of the agitation for the opening of Oklahoma to settlement (1879) cattle ranches had been established in many parts of the western half of the Indian Territory.

172. **The Ranchmen as Pioneers.**—The first stock men who established ranches in the western part of the Indian Territory did so when conditions were decidedly unsettled. Many of the Indians, who had recently retired to their reservations, were still restless, and at least one hostile outbreak (that of the Northern Cheyenne) took place after the coming of the cattlemen. White outlaws and horse thieves were numerous and, by their depredations, served to keep the Indians suspicious of the cattlemen. The presence of the cattlemen in the Indian Territory does not seem to have been contemplated by the laws of the United States. Consequently, when the law was lacking, the cattlemen had to be a law unto themselves. If their efforts in this line seemed primitive and severe, they at least maintained a creditable degree of order. Having thus established themselves, it was only natural that they should resent the idea of being dispossessed to make way for the permanent settlement of the Oklahoma country.

173. **Removal of the Ponca and Pawnee Indians.**—When the Ponca Indians were first brought to the Indian Territory, in 1876, they were settled in the Cherokee country, near the Missouri and Kansas borders. There they were annoyed by intruders and whiskey sellers, and the depredations of horsethieves to such an extent that they appealed to Presi-

dent Hayes, by whose directon they were permitted to select a new reservation west of the Arkansas River in 1878. The remnants of the once powerful Pawnee Nation were brought from Nebraska in 1876 and settled on a reservation between the Arkansas and Cimarron Rivers.

174. **The Northern Cheyenne.**—During the Sioux war in Dakota, Wyoming and Montana, in 1876, the Northern Cheyenne took an active part in the hostilities. After they were reduced to submission, the Government authorities decided that they should be taken south to the Indian Territory and reunited with the main body of the tribe from which they had long been separated. The first party of Northern Cheyenne arrived at Fort Reno, August 5, 1877, under the charge of Lieut. H. W. Lawton,* by whom they were turned over to the post commander, Col. J. K. Mizner. A few days later they were placed in charge of Indian Agent J. D. Miles. They remained sullen and distant and refused to fraternize with their kindred of the Southern Cheyenne.

175. **The Nez Perce Indians.**—In 1878, the Nez Perce Indians, who under the leadership of Chief Joseph, had participated in one of the most remarkable campaigns in the history of Indian warfare, were brought as prisoners to Oklahoma and settled on a small reservation in the Cherokee Strip, within the present limits of Kay county.†

176. **The Dull Knife Raid.**—September 9, 1878, three hundred of the Northern Cheyenne, under the chief Dull Knife, left the reservation for the North. They killed several ranchmen in Northern Oklahoma and some settlers in Western Kansas, besides destroying property and running off stock. Troops pursued them but did not overtake them until they were hundreds of miles from the starting point. December 9, 1878, Little Chief's band of Northern Cheyenne were

*Afterward Gen. Henry W. Lawton, who was killed in battle in the Philippines.

†The Nez Perce constantly pined for their mountain homes from which they had been exiled. In 1883, a small party of them returned to the northwest and in 1885 the remainder of the tribe was transported to new reservations in Washington and Idaho.

brought to the Darlington agency. Dull Knife and his party of runaways were permitted to remain in the North. In January, 1879, six companies of the 23d U. S. Infantry were stationed on the North Canadian at a point in what is now Blaine County, about midway between Fort Reno and Camp Supply. This station was afterwards known as Cantonment. The people of Kansas being apprehensive of further trouble with the Northern Cheyenne, Governor St. John of that state mustered in a company of state guards for special service along the border of the Cherokee Strip.*

177. **Proposed Organization of the Indian Territory.**—In January, 1879, Senator Stephen W. Dorsey, of Arkansas, introduced a bill into Congress the purpose of which was to organize the Indian Territory. The Indians of the Five Civilized Tribes entered a vigorous protest against the passage of the measure.† It did not become a law.

178. **The Unassigned Lands.**—That part of the lands ceded to the United States by the Creek and Seminole Nations (by the treaties of 1866) which was bounded on the north by the Cherokee Strip, on the east by the Indian Meridian, on the south by the South Canadian River and on the west by the Cheyenne and Arapaho reservation, was never assigned to

*Little Chief held his band in peace until October 6, 1881, when they were permitted to return to the North. The rest of the Northern Cheyenne started north to the Pine Ridge Agency, under escort, July 19, 1883, only a few preferring to remain with the Cheyenne of the Darlington Agency.

†On its surface, the Dorsey Bill was apparently very fair to the Indians. Indeed, none but Indians were to be eligible to hold office. But hidden away in one of its sections was discovered the real purpose of the measure, namely, to make railroad land grants effective in the Indian Territory and thus take a large amount of Indian land without giving the Indians anything in payment for the same. In order to influence votes in favor of the Dorsey Bill, one railway company which was operating a line in the Indian Territory at that time, actually gave options on stock at thirty-two cents on the dollar (to members of Congress), which was to be paid for only on delivery, while, at the same time, the promoters of the scheme had the price of that identical stock run up to forty-nine cents on the dollar on the New York Stock Exchange. In other words, the congressmen whose votes were needed were offered a sure and immediate profit of fifty-three cents on each dollar invested.

any Indian reservation.* This tract, which embraced portions of Payne, Logan, Oklahoma, Cleveland, Canadian and Kingfisher counties, was the one on which all of the intruding colonies of "boomers" proposed to locate in the various invasions which occurred between 1879 and 1885. From 1879 until the passage of the bill which provided that it should be opened to settlement, this tract was called "The Oklahoma country" to the exclusion of any other part of the Indian Territory, for the whole of which the name Oklahoma had been proposed by the Choctaw treaty commissioners in 1866.

179. **The Proposed Settlement of the Oklahoma Country.**—During the decade following the treaty agreement of the Indians of the Plains tribes to retire to reservations (1867) immigration to the West was very heavy. The fertile prairie lands of Minnesota, Iowa, Kansas, Nebraska and Dakota were peopled by a hardy class of pioneers and settlements were made even as far west as the border of the Great Plains. With so many million acres of land available for homestead entry, it is not strange that the eyes of intending settlers were not cast on the unoccupied lands of the western part of the Indian Territory. But, if prospective settlers did not see the opportunity, ambitious railway builders did, and they really instigated the agitation for the opening of Oklahoma to settlement by white people.† April 15, 1879, General Attorney T. C. Sears, of the Missouri, Kansas & Texas Railway Company, announced that, with Col. E. C. Boudinot, of the Cherokee Nation, he had been investigating the legal status of the lands of the western part of the Indian Territory;

*It is said that representatives of the Arickaree tribe of Indians (from Dakota) visited the unassigned lands in 1869 for the purpose of selecting a reservation, but left without doing so after being persuaded that it would not suit their people.

†The Missouri, Kansas & Texas, and the Atlantic & Pacific, (now the Frisco) were the only railways which penetrated any part of the Indian Territory prior to 1884. The last mentioned road had a Congressional charter by virtue of which it planned to build a line of railway across the Territory from east to west. There are strong reasons to believe that the officials of these two railway corporations were so anxious to see the country opened up to settlement that they encouraged immediate settlement without waiting for Congressional sanction

that they had thus learned that there were 14,000,000 acres which belonged to the public domain of the United States, the same being subject to homestead settlement. This announcement naturally caused considerable excitement in the states adjacent to the Indian Territory. It was immediately proposed to effect the settlement of such lands by means of organized colonies.* Three of these "colonies" were organized; one at Kansas City, Missouri, being under the leadership of Charles C. Carpenter, who had aided in the opening of the Black Hills region in a like manner only three years before; one at Topeka, under the leadership of J. R. Boyd, while a third organization was effected in Texas to move northward from a point near Caddo, Indian Territory.† The Carpenter colony moved south across the line from Coffeyville, Kansas, May 7, 1879. Gen. Wesley Merritt, with five troops of the 5th U. S. Cavalry, was ordered to remove the intruding party, which was promptly done.§

180. **A Visit from the Secretary of the Interior.**—In October, 1879, Gen. Carl. Schurz, Secretary of the Interior in the Cabinet of President Hayes, made a tour of several weeks duration in the western part of the Indian Territory, visiting the Indian agencies at Anadarko, Darlington, Ponca and other points.

181. **Another Railway on the Border.**—April 20, 1880, the Atchison, Topeka & Santa Fe Railway completed its line

*"On to Oklahoma" was the watchword all along the border. Adventurers from all quarters, attracted by the novelty of the proposition, flocked to the camps of the would-be settlers, and the whole affair seemed to have been organized on the lines of a holiday picnic excursion rather than a serious effort to effect a settlement in a forbidden region.

†President Rutherford B. Hayes issued a proclamation April 26, 1879, forbidding the proposed settlement on the unassigned lands.

§It is not known that Capt. David L. Payne had any connection with these first efforts to colonize the Oklahoma country. Indeed, it is authoritatively stated that he did not return to Kansas from his four years' sojourn at Washington, D. C., until over three months after the first attempt to make a settlement in Oklahoma. So it would seem that contrary to popular belief, Payne was not the first Oklahoma "boomer," even though in the end he proved to be the most persistent.

to the Indian Territory boundary, at Caldwell, Kansas, which henceforth became a great cattle shipping center.*

CAPT. DAVID L. PAYNE

182. A Second Executive Proclamation. — Learning that the settlers were again organized for the invasion of the Oklahoma country, President Hayes issued a second proclamation February 12, 1880, warning them to desist.

183. Payne's Oklahoma Colony.—Captain Payne† led a colony to the North Canadian River in April, 1880, locating near the present site of Oklahoma City. May 15, the colonists were arrested by Lieut. George H. G. Gale, in command of a detachment of the 4th U. S. Cavalry, and taken to Fort Reno.

*Besides the cattle which were marketed from the ranges in the Cherokee Strip and other portions of Western Indian Territory, it was estimated that the number driven north from Texas over the Chisholm Trail during the years 1878-9-80 averaged between 250,000 and 300,000 head annually.

†David L. Payne was born near Fairmont, Grant county, Indiana, December 30, 1836. He came of good pioneering American stock. His father was a farmer. His mother was a first cousin of Davy Crockett, the noted hunter, who gave his life for the cause of Texan independence in the defense of the Alamo. Payne's education was as meagre as that which fell to the lot of the average farmer's son of his day, but he is said to have been of a studious disposition and was an eager reader. When he was twenty-one years old Payne moved to Kansas Territory, settling on a homestead claim in Doniphan county. At the outbreak of the Civil War he enlisted as a private in the 4th Kansas Regiment, and his record of three years' service was one of fidelity to every duty. Returning to Kansas at the expiration of his term of enlistment, he was elected to the State Legislature in the fall of 1864. During the session he was active, especially in matters pertaining to military affairs. In the meantime he had been again in the field as

Later, the prisoners were escorted to the Kansas border by troops under the command of Capt. T. B. Robinson, 19th U. S. Infantry, and released June 7, 1880. Payne returned to Oklahoma within a month (July 12), where he was

captain in command of a company of state militia called into the service to aid in repelling the Price raid. After the Legislature adjourned he immediately re-enlisted in the military service as a private, (taking the place of a man who had been drafted but who had a large family to support,) and being assigned to the 8th Regiment, U. S. Veteran Reserve Corps. Shortly afterward he was offered a commission as a lieutenant in the Regular Army but declined. He was at Appomatox and saw the close of the great conflict. In 1866 he was sargeant-at-arms of the Kansas House of Representatives. A little later he was appointed postmaster at Fort Leavenworth. In 1867 he was commissioned captain of the 18th Kansas Cavalry—a battalion raised for service against the Indians. With this command he saw much active and arduous service in the western part of Kansas. His troop was attacked by a scourage of cholera, which was epidemic on the Plains at that time. In 1868 the Secretary of War asked the Governor of Kansas for a full regiment of volunteer cavalry, and when it was mustered into the service as the 19th Kansas, Payne was again a troop captain. During the winter of 1868-9 the 19th Kansas saw active service in Southern Kansas and Western Oklahoma, being with Custer during part of the campaign on the Washita. In 1870 Payne located on a claim in Sedgwick county, Kansas. The next year he was elected to the lower house of the State Legislature. During the session which followed his principal distinction was gained by introducing and successfully championing a measure for the removal of the political disabilities of ex-Confederate soldiers. In 1872 he was nominated for the State Senate, but was defeated, though running far ahead of his ticket, being a democrat at that time, though formerly affiliated with the republicans. Then he spent several years in Colorado and New Mexico and at his boyhood home in Indiana. Afterward he secured a place as assistant doorkeeper of the House of Representatives at Washington, where he remained until the adjournment of Congress in March, 1879. It was while living at the national capital that he learned of the legal status of the so-called Oklahoma country and became convinced that it should be opened to homestead settlement. Immediately on his return to the West he began to plan and agitate his Oklahoma colony proposition. During the ensuing five years his activities along this line were incessant, and he was the soul and inspiration of the Oklahoma movement until his death, which occurred very suddenly and unexpectedly at Wellington, Kansas, November 27, 1884. He was buried at Wellington.

Payne is popularly credited with having originated the idea of colonizing the Oklahoma country, and by many he is believed to have bestowed the Indian name of Oklahoma upon the country in which he tried to settle. As a matter of fact, he did neither. The name Oklahoma can be traced back to a time long before Payne dreamed of leading white settlers into it, and at least two attempts

again arrested (July 16) with a few of his leaders and taken to Fort Reno. From that post Payne was taken to Fort Smith, where he was cited to appear before the Federal Court at its November term and then released without bond.*

184. **Settlement Prevented.**—During the fall of 1880 Payne was very active in organizing a new colony to enter the Oklahoma country. The would-be settlers gathered in camp at Caldwell, Kansas. The Indians of the Five Civilized Tribes sent a delegation to that place to visit Payne and his followers in November for the purpose of dissuading them from further efforts to settle in Oklahoma.† Payne planned to move across the border on December 6, 1880. The War Department sent a strong force of troops under the command of Maj. Geo. M. Randall to prevent the proposed invasion of the "boomers."§ Hundreds of the latter were gathered in

---

were made to colonize it before Payne returned to the West from Washington. But, while others who tried to organize colonies and lead them into the Oklahoma country grew discouraged and turned to other pursuits, Payne persisted with a determination that seemed to be born of a mighty purpose and seemingly no amount of defeat or disappointment could dampen his ardor or discourage his dauntless spirit. Heedless alike of obstacles and sneers, he kept his one great purpose ever in mind. One arrest and removal from the forbidden territory might satisfy the adventurous longings of some of the other Oklahoma leaders, but not so with Payne. He spent over five years in actively pushing the Oklahoma propaganda. During that time not less than eight attempts were made to colonize the Oklahoma country under his direction. It was largely due to his ability as an organizer and his persistent agitation that Oklahoma became a household word. He commanded the confidence and even the affection of his followers. At the time of his death he was still actively engaged in organizing another colony to march into the Oklahoma country.

*Payne appeared at the November term of the U. S. District Court, but his case was continued on motion of the prosecuting attorney, though Payne and his followers were ready for trial.

†At the same time the Indians also sent a strong deputation to Washington to lobby against any Congressional action favorable to the proposed opening of Oklahoma lands to white settlement. This delegation was headed by Pleasant Porter of the Creek Nation.

§Contrary to all official precedents, several of the army officers and United States Indian agents seemed to take a personal as well as official interest in opposing the plans of the "boomers," as instanced by their frequent and voluble newspaper interviews. It was alleged at the time that one prominent army officer threatened to turn the Indians loose on the "boomers."

camp, where many of them remained all winter, closely watched by the soldiers who were encamped near by. The winter was one of exceptional severity and the colonists suffered considerable hardship.

185. **The Cherokee Cattle Tax.**—The Cherokee Nation had levied a tax of one dollar per head upon all the cattle kept on the ranges of the Cherokee Strip. The cattlemen felt that this was an exorbitant tax, and it was the occasion of a great deal of dispute during the summer and early fall of 1880. In December of that year the Cherokee Council reduced the tax to forty cents per head for grown stock and twenty-five cents per head for yearlings.

186. **First General Meeting of Cherokee Strip Stockmen.**—March 16, 1881, a meeting of the cattlement of the Cherokee Strip was held at Caldwell, Kansas, for the discussion of common interests, arranging for the registration of stock brands, etc.*

187. **Payne Appeals to the Courts.**—Baffled in their attempt to enter the Oklahoma country, Payne's colony gradually dwindled in numbers. Payne's activity was incessant, however. He seemed never to lose heart nor hope, and some of his loyal followers did not desert him and his cause in the days of adversity. If he fretted at all, it was not because of hardship so much as on account of his inability to have his contentions tested in the courts. The hearings of charges against him were always postponed and, finally, dismissed. In order to force the issue, he brought suit in the United States District Court at Topeka, Kansas, in May, 1881, for damages against Gen. John Pope, Department Commander of the U. S. Army, on account of his forcible removal from the Territory. In this effort he was again frustrated by repeated postponements.

188. **A Texas Colony.**—In the fall of 1881, Payne re-organized his colony in Northern Texas, and, crossing the Red

*S. S. Birchfield was Chairman and R. F. Crawford Secretary of the meeting. This was the beginning of the movement which culminated in the organization of the Cherokee Strip Live Stock Association, two years later.

River, encamped on Cache Creek, in November. He was promptly expelled by troops of the Regular Army. At that time the Atlantic & Pacific Railway Company was reported to be considering the extension of its line from the eastern part of the Indian Territory westward to New Mexico.

189. Activity of Cattle Interests.—In March, 1882, the cattle ranchmen who ranged their herds in the Cherokee Strip, held their second meeting at Caldwell, Kansas.* Shortly afterward the cattlemen began to fence the Cherokee Strip lands into large pastures. This was not regarded as a favorable sign by the Oklahoma "boomers," though their designs did not include the settlement of the Cherokee Strip at that time. The fact that the so-called Oklahoma country was also occupied by cattle ranges and that the ranchmen of that section might also take to fencing up the land, had a very disquieting effect on the "boomers."

190. Payne's Visit to Washington.—Unable to secure any ruling from the Federal courts that would authoritatively determine the status of the lands of the unassigned district, Payne went to Washington in July, 1882, to see the Secretary of the Interior. The secretary (Henry M. Teller, of Colorado) gave Payne no satisfaction.

191. Another Effort at Colonization.—Payne returned to the West and promptly organized a new colony to move into the Oklahoma country.† With his followers, he was arrested in the Territory early in September, 1882, taken to Fort Reno and thence to Fort Smith, Arkansas, by way of Henrietta, Texas. At Fort Smith, Payne and several of his followers

*Caldwell was not only a shipping point for the cattle interests, but it was also a general headquarters for supplies, and the cattle ranchmen naturally gathered there. The families of many of the leading cattlemen of the Cherokee Strip lived at Caldwell.

†"The Oklahoma War Chief," official organ of Payne's Oklahoma colony, issued its first number at Caldwell, Kansas, January 12, 1883. This unique periodical experienced a great many vicissitudes. Its place of publication was changed from town to town along the Indian Territory border in Southern Kansas at least half a dozen times, and its changes of editorial and business management were almost as numerous. It was issued more or less regularly until August 12, 1886, when it suspended.

were served wth summons to appear at the November term of the U. S. District Court. When they appeared for trial the case was continued on motion of the District Attorney. Payne then began to assemble his followers for another attempt to effect a settlement in Oklahoma.

192. **The Spiechee War.**—The Creek Indians had never experienced complete harmony as a tribe since their differences on account of the Civil War. During the first ten years after the close of the Civil War, despite the fact that the Creek people had agreed to drop past differences, there were several movements that indicated unrest, Oktarharsars Harjo (also known as "Sands") being the leader of the dissatisfied portion of the tribe. In the fall of 1882 the feeling of enmity between the two factions became very acute, ending in violence. Samuel Checote (Checotah) was the principal chief of the Creek Nation at the time. Spiechee (Isparhechar)* had been a rival aspirant for the chieftancy, and those who defied the Creek national authorities looked to him for leadership. December 24, 1882, a company of Creek light horsemen (militia) while scouting, struck the camp of Spiechee a few miles west of Okmulgee. A fight ensued in which the light-horsemen lost seven men. Pleasant Porter was placed in command of the national forces which were organized and placed in the field. With six hundred men he marched to the Spiechee camp, which

ISPARHECHAR

*Isparhechar was born in the Creek country in Alabama, about the year 1828. In 1836 his parents migrated to the Indian Territory, both of them dying shortly afterward. Isparhechar grew up with but scant education. At the outbreak of the Civil War he enlisted in a Creek Regiment, which entered the Confederate service, but later joined the Union Army as a volunteer, being mustered out of the service in 1865. He became a leader among what were known as the loyal Creek party, and was several times nominated as its candidate for principal chief. He was elected to that position in 1895 and served four years. He died in December, 1902.

was found to be deserted. General Porter* then pursued the retreating band beyond the Sac and Fox line. The latter moved on across the Unassigned Lands and finally reached the Wichita Agency, at Anadarko. There Spiechee appealed to the Comanche and other Southwestern tribes to aid him in his warlike demonstration against the existing tribal government. Meanwhile, J. Q. Tufts, United States Indian Agent at the Muskogee Agency, and the military authorities at Fort Gibson, had exerted every effort to bring about a peaceful settlement of the dispute. Spiechee's followers, including women and children, had suffered severely during

GEN. PLEASANT PORTER

*Pleasant Porter was born on a plantation near Clarksville, in the Creek Nation, September 26, 1840. His paternal grandfather, a native of Pennsylvania, was a captain in the United States Army at the time of the Creek War, and showed such consideration for the defeated Muskogee Indians that they formally adopted him into their tribe. Years later, Pleasant Porter's father, Benjamin E. Porter, came to the Creek country and married the daughter of a prominent chief, Tah-to-pec Tust-e-nuk-kee, and settled on a plantation. Pleasant Porter's early life was simple, if not uneventful. His education was secured at the Presbyterian Mission School at Tallahassee. At the outbreak of the Civil War he entered the Confederate Army as a private. He saw much active service during the War, and was promoted through the various grades to the rank of first lieutenant. The close of the War found him, like most of his fellow tribesmen, penniless. He began life then as a farmer. His first official position in civil life was that of superintendent of schools of the Creek Nation, in which capacity he re-organized the educational system, which had ceased to exist during the War. His ability becoming recognized, his services were soon in demand as a representative of his people at Washington. At the time of the Spiechee War in 1882-3, Pleasant Porter was entrusted with the command of the administration military forces, a duty which he discharged not only fearlessly, but also with great judgment and tact. During the later years of his life he occupied the position of principal chief of the Creek Nation. His attainments and integrity were such that he easily ranked as one of the most distinguished and influential Indians of his time. His death occurred at Vinita, in September, 1907.

their winter campaign. They had abandoned their farms to which they did not return when spring came. They were finally taken back across the Creek country to Fort Gibson, under a military escort commanded by Capt. John C. Bates.

193. **Colonists Again Removed.**—Leaving the Kansas line February 1, 1883, with several hundred men, Payne made his way to the valley of the North Canadian, where he was at once arrested (February 6) by Capt. Henry Carroll, of the 9th U. S. Cavalry, and, with several other leaders, was taken to Fort Reno, while the remainder of the "invaders" were escorted to the Kansas line and released.*

194. **Court Jurisdiction.**—Each of the Five Civilized Tribes had its own courts, which dealt with all violations of tribal laws. All cases wherein white people were involved and all cases wherein offenses of Indians against the laws of the United States were charged, were tried before the United States District Court at Fort Smith, Arkansas.† Early in 1883 Congress passed an act which provided that such cases arising in certain parts of the Indian Territory should be tried in the United States District Courts at Paris, Texas, and Wichita, Kansas.

195. **Organization of Cherokee Strip Live Stock Association.**—March 6, 1883, the cattlemen of the Cherokee Strip held their third annual meeting at Caldwell, Kansas. This meeting resulted in the organization of the Cherokee Strip Live Stock Association, which was duly incorporated under the laws of the state of Kansas.§

*One hundred and fifty men came northward from Texas, as far as the South Canadian, to join Payne, but turned back when they learned of his arrest. Others came westward from Arkansas at the same time.

†A large part of the business of the Federal court at Fort Smith consisted of cases from the Indian Territory. Most of these were charges of murder, horse stealing and selling whiskey to the Indians.

§The Cherokee Strip Live Stock Association became a power in the determination of the affairs of a large section of the western half of the Indian Territory from that time on. It was a business institution and was organized on business principles, but it was sufficiently versatile to take a hand in politics or social affairs or any other line that would further its interests. While its inter-

196. **Peace Among the Creek Indians.**—Spiechee and his followers had been loyal to the United States during the Civil War and they felt agrieved that they were called upon to sacrifice and surrender a large part of the Creek country because of the fact that part of the Creek people had espoused the cause of the Confederacy. By way of compensation for this and other grievances, they demanded that the Creek Nation be divided into two separate tribes and the reservation be divided into equal parts by a line running east and west. The Secretary of the Interior selected a commission to visit the Indian Territory and adjust the dispute among the Creek people.* The commission met representatives of both factions in August, 1883.† The proposition to divide the tribe

---

ests were local, its influence was powerful and widely felt, being manifest in the halls of Congress, in the executive departments of the Government at Washington, and also in the great financial centers. It was liberal in its advertising patronage, and thus controlled the sentiment of many newspapers, both local and metropolitan. Its members or stockholders included senators and representatives in Congress, leading officials of the Government, and Wall Street financiers. It leased nearly 6,000,000 acres of land from the Cherokee Indians at one and two-thirds cents per acre, and sub-let much of the same at a good round profit. It levied assessments upon the sub-lessees and, if the same were not paid, it confiscated stock, an act for which there was no recourse. In short, its plan of operations was so systematic and complete that there is reason to believe that its organization must have served as a model for some of the great commercial and financial combines which have developed since its decline.

*The active members of this commission were Gen. Clinton B. Fisk, of New Jersey, and Gen. Elaphalet Whittlesey, of Washington, D. C. Senator Coke, of Texas, who was a member of the commission, did not visit the Territory with the other members.

†The Chairman of the Commission (General Fisk) notified the leaders of both parties of the time of the proposed council and especially urged promptness in attendance. It so happened that the day selected for the council was Monday. At the appointed hour practically all of the leaders were present, with the exception of Checote, who was principal chief of the Creek Nation. Checote did not arrive until twenty-four hours after the time set for the council to convene, much to the annoyance of the members of Government Commission, who wished to avoid all delay. When he did arrive, Checote, who had been a colonel in the Confederate service and who was then and had been for many years a Methodist minister, voluntarily made a most courteous, dignified and eloquent apology for his tardiness. He said that he could not have

and the reservation was rejected after several days of negotiation and persuasion, and an agreement of peace was signed August 10, 1883, by the leading representatives. Principal Chief Checote manifested a most pacific disposition, resigning his position and calling a special election in September to fill the vacancy thus created. Three tickets were placed in the field, headed respectively by Checote, Spiechee and J. M. Perryman. Perryman was elected.

197. **Payne Again Appeals to the Courts.**—In July, 1883, Payne applied to the United States District Court at Topeka, Kansas, for an injunction restraining the military authorities from interfering with colonists or "boomers" in their attempts to settle in Oklahoma.

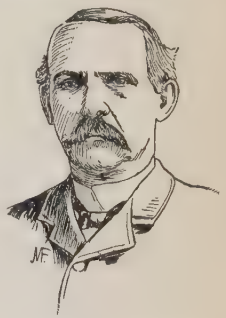
198. **Payne Arrested and Indicted.**—August 10, two hundred and fifty "boomers" left Arkansas City for Oklahoma. Payne was not with them but, a month later, September 12, he and three associates were arrested at Wichita, charged with a conspiracy to violate the laws of the United States. Three weeks later they were formally indicted by a Federal grand jury. Meanwhile the hearing of the application for an injunction to prevent the interference of military authorities was repeatedly postponed on the motion of the United States District Attorney. About this time twenty-five miles of barb-wire fence, forming part of the enclosure of a big cattle pasture which was leased and used by the Standard Oil Company, was cut and destroyed, presumably by "boomers." The Standard Oil Company appealed to the U. S. District Attorney for Kansas (James R. Hallowell), who in-

---

arrived at the council at the appointed hour except by traveling on the Sabbath. This, he said, was contrary to the teachings of his church and faith, and, much as he disliked to disobey the mandates of the representatives of the great government of the United States, yet such was his regard for the precepts and example of Christ, whose humble follower he was, that he had felt constrained to postpone his start until after the Sabbath. General Fisk at once assured Checote that he had done right in following the dictates of his conscience, and added that he would never again make a business appointment that would cause anyone to travel on the Sabbath contrary to his beliefs and wishes.

formed the company's representatives that there was no recourse.*

199. **Payne's Last Invasion.**—The beginning of the year 1884 found the popular interest in the Oklahoma movement undiminished. Instead of going into Oklahoma in a body, the "boomers" went singly or in small parties into the forbidden land. There were hundreds of settlers in Oklahoma all through the following summer. Military forces were active, but as fast as part of the settlers were taken out of the country others came into it. July 31, President Arthur issued a proclamation forbidding the invasion of Oklahoma and warning all intruders to withdraw. Finally, August 9, Payne and seven other leaders were arrested at Rock Falls (four miles south of Hunnewell, Kansas, in the Cherokee Strip. Later, they were indicted for conspiracy against the United States by intruding on Indian lands.† The "boomers" were finally compelled to withdraw by reason of the fact that all of their supplies were systematically intercepted by troops under the command of Gen. Edward Hatch.



SIDNEY CLARKE

200. **Death of Payne.**—The sudden death of Captain Payne at Wellington, Kansas, November 27, 1884, bereft the Oklahoma movement of its dauntless leader, but his work was well done. The influences which had been arrayed against the movement of which he was the acknowledged

*Newspapers published in towns along the Indian Territory border in Southern Kansas had columns of live stock and cattle brand advertising after the organization of the Cherokee Strip Live Stock Association, and their editorial opinions seemed to be correspondingly affected, as every paper which was thus patronized became most zealous in its opposition to the Oklahoma movement.

†This indictment was quashed by the United States District Judge, C. G. Foster, on the ground that the title to the Oklahoma lands was vested in the United States, and, therefore, settlement upon the same by citizens of the United States was not a criminal offense. This was Payne's first and only real victory before the courts.

leader, realized all too well that his death did not end the movement. His followers were numerous and determined and, moreover, his long, patient struggle and his pathetic death had at last made an impression upon the sympathies and sentiments of the people, and a popular demand for the opening of Oklahoma soon became manifest. It was but a few days after the death of Payne that a bill was introduced into Congress providing for the opening of the lands of the unassigned district to settlement by homestead entry.*

---

*This bill was prepared by former Representative Sidney Clarke, of Kansas, at the instance of Senator Charles H. Van Wyck, of Nebraska, and Representatives James B. Weaver, of Iowa, and William M. Springer, of Illinois.

Sidney Clarke was born at Southbridge, Massachusetts, in 1831. In early life he embarked in the newspaper business. In 1858 he emigrated from his native state to Kansas, settling at Lawrence. He soon became actively identified with the political affairs of that new state. In 1862 he was elected a member of the Legislature. In 1863 he was commissioned an assistant adjutant general in the volunteer military service. In 1864 he was elected to Congress, and was re-elected in 1866 and 1868. In 1879 he was again a member of the State Legislature, being elected speaker of the House. From December, 1885, to March, 1889, he was actively engaged in the work of trying to secure the opening of the Oklahoma lands to settlement. In the closing hours of the Fiftieth Congress he aided in drafting the amendment to the Indian Appropriation Bill, the final passage of which resulted in opening of Oklahoma a few weeks afterward. Coming to Oklahoma at the time of the opening in April, 1889, Mr. Clarke settled at Oklahoma City, where he has ever since lived. In 1898 and again in 1900 he was elected a member of the upper branch of the Territorial Legislative Assembly.

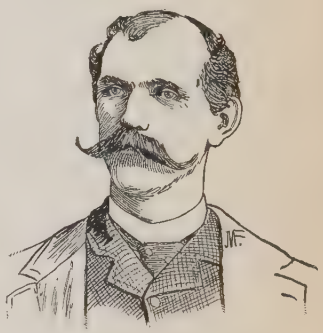
CHAPTER XIII

(1884-1889)

Continued Agitation for the Right of Settlement in Oklahoma.

201.

COUCH Succeeds Payne.—W. L. Couch, who had long been one of Payne's most trusted lieutenants, was chosen to succeed him as the leader of the movement to colonize the Oklahoma country.* Couch took up the cause of the "boomers" with the same earnestness and energy which had characterized the efforts of Payne. Less than two weeks after the death of Payne (December 8) he left the Kansas line at the head of a large colony of "boomers." Four days later (December 12), the party reached the valley of Stillwater Creek, where a town was laid out, claims were taken and the work of erecting cabins was begun. In January, 1885, President Arthur



WILLIAM L. COUCH

*William L. Couch was born in North Carolina in 1850. In 1866 his father's family moved to Johnson county, Kansas, and four years later, settled at the town of Douglas, in Butler county. In 1880 he became identified with the Payne-Oklahoma Colony and remained one of the most active leaders of that movement until, in November, 1884, he was chosen as Payne's successor. He was the first mayor of Oklahoma City under the provisional government. He was shot during a dispute over a homestead claim at Oklahoma City, April 14, 1890, and died six days later.

issued a proclamation warning the intruding "boomers" to withdraw. January 24, Gen. Edward Hatch, with a force of six hundred soldiers and two pieces of artillery, arrived on the Stillwater.* General Hatch notified Couch that he would have to move out within two days, and that if he did not do so the troops would be ordered to fire on the camps of the "boomers." The latter very reluctantly withdrew retreating to the Kansas boundary line without military escort. The border was patrolled by troops which intercepted supplies intended for any settlers that might have eluded military vigilance.†

*Lieut. M. W. Day, 9th U. S. Cavalry, with a small force of troops, had arrived several weeks earlier and attempted to drive out the "boomers," but reported that he met with resistance, and that, because of the superior numbers of the intruders, he decided to await re-enforcements. He retired across the Cimarron to a point a few miles northeast of Guthrie and went into camp. This encampment, known as Camp Russell, was garrisoned during the greater part of the winter of 1884-5 by four troops of cavalry and a company of infantry. Maj. Thomas B. Dewees, 9th U. S. Cavalry, was in command.

†The method of procedure in the expulsion of intruders from the Oklahoma country was as follows: The Secretary of the Interior, after having been notified of the presence of settlers in forbidden territory, (either by the Indian agent or by the cattlemen) would notify the President of the United States that "intruders" or "trespassers" were "settling on Indian lands." The President, thereupon, would instruct the Secretary of War to use troops of the Regular Army in forcibly removing the intruding settlers, and that, too, without any inquiry as to whether such alleged settlement was within the limits of any regularly established Indian reservation or merely on a part of the unappropriated public domain. The Secretary of War, knowing no duty save that of obedience to the instructions of the President, would then promptly telegraph orders to the department commander of the Army at Fort Leavenworth, who immediately detailed the necessary detachments of troops for field service in removing the intruders. In the performance of this duty, all settlers were removed, though the cattlemen, who had no more legal right in the Oklahoma country, were never molested by the troops. The settlers were sometimes placed under arrest, but never tried. No question was ever asked as to the propriety of such a policy. The President relied implicitly on the representations of the Secretary of the Interior. The Secretary of War had no choice but to obey the orders of constituted authority, and so on down to the negro troopers who destroyed the implements and improvements and confiscated the provisions of the settlers. The suffering settler had no redress for his loss. But, if his enterprise now appears to have been rash and risky, he was nevertheless sure that he was right.

202. **Couch Arrested.**—After the return of the "boomers" from Stillwater Creek to the Kansas line, Couch and twelve other leaders of the movement were arrested on a charge of treason against the United States and were taken to Wichita and placed in jail.* Despite the imprisonment of their leaders, the "boomers" were still active. Rumors and plans of fresh invasions of the Oklahoma country were current. Very early in the administration of President Cleveland (March 13, 1885), an executive proclamation was issued, declaring the Oklahoma lands to be Indian lands and warning intending settlers to desist from intrusion. The disappointed settlers, who had hoped for more favorable treatment from the new administration, met and adopted resolutions of protest.† Then the cattlemen were notified by the military authorities to move out, but it is not recorded that the latter took the notification seriously.

203. **Arrest and Imprisonment of Editor Crocker.**—Charged with "seditious conspiracy and inciting insurrection," Samuel Crocker, editor of the "Oklahoma War Chief," was arrested July 10, 1885, and confined in the Cowley County (Kansas) jail. After having been in prison for nearly a month, Crocker was released under bond to appear for trial October 12, 1885, at Leavenworth, Kansas.§

204. **Threatened Indian Outbreak.**—In the spring of 1885 many of the Cheyenne Indians became restless and were reported to be buying and secreting arms and ammunition. The continued agitation of the Oklahoma question and the presence of the stockmen in the Indian country were prob-

*When the case came to a hearing in the United States District Court some weeks later, General Hatch and the other prosecuting witnesses failed to appear and the prisoners were discharged.

†These resolutions named the intruding cattle companies which occupied ranges in the Oklahoma country. These cattle companies included in their lists of stockholders, senators and representatives in Congress, army officers of high rank, and other public officials. General Hatch professed to be ignorant of the presence of the cattlemen within the limits of the prescribed territory.

§When the case against Crocker was called for trial it was dismissed by the prosecution.

ably responsible for the dissatisfaction which was manifest among the Cheyenne. About the middle of July following, rumors of an impending Indian outbreak became current among the recently established settlements on the border in Southwestern Kansas. These rumors, which grew with astonishing speed, finally reached a sensational press correspondent, who promptly and effectively put the finishing touches on a real Indian scare of no mean proportions.* The Cheyenne warriors remained silent and sullen. The Government rushed the concentration of more than 5,000 soldiers into the Indian Territory and along its border as fast as the railways could move them. Lieut. Gen. P. H. Sheridan came from Washington to take personal command, while Generals Nelson A. Miles, Wesley Merritt and other famous Indian fighters, were present in line of duty. Whether the Cheyenne were overawed by such a display of military force or not, there was no outbreak of hostilities.

205. The Difficulty with the Cheyenne Settled.—After a thorough investigation into the causes of dissatisfaction among the Cheyenne, General Sheridan notified President Cleveland that there could be no permanent settlement of the trouble until the stockmen were required to remove their cattle from the Cheyenne and Arapaho Reservation.† Accordingly President Cleveland issued a proclamation, July

*For a period of some days 50,000 frightened settlers in Southwestern Kansas lived in constant dread of an Indian raid. But the dread of the horrors of an Indian outbreak were not confined to the settlers in Kansas. One doting mother back in New York, whose ambitious son had located at Wichita, (then a town of some 15,000 inhabitants) telegraphed him to return home to mother and safety before it was too late! When the fact is recalled that, all told, there were probably not over 4,000 Cheyenne Indians in Oklahoma, the ridiculousness of the scare is apparent.

†Consternation reigned among the cattlemen. They started a delegation, post haste, to Washington for the purpose of protesting and securing some modification of the order. Col. D. P. Dyer, of St. Louis, who was agent of the Cheyenne and Arapaho, resigned and Capt. Jesse M. Lee, of the 9th U. S. Infantry, was installed as agent. The stockmen pleaded for delay on various pretexts, but Captain Lee was firm and exacting in obeying instructions, and cattle valued at over $500,000.00 had to be removed from the reservation within the time allowed.

23, 1885, warning all owners of stock on that reservation to remove the same within forty days and declaring existing leases to be void and of no effect.

206. **Agitation Against Fencing Oklahoma Lands.**—From the beginning of the movement to settle Oklahoma, Payne, Couch and all of the other leaders professed to believe that they were acting within their legal rights, and their endeavor to secure the opening of the lands of the Oklahoma country to settlement by legal means were incessant. Finding that there was to be no change of policy with respect to their claims under the Cleveland administration, the "boomers" determined that the cattle companies should be brought to respect the law also.* With this end in view, they started a strong agitation against the illegal fencing of the public domain in the Okla-

*As an instance of the feeling of bitterness with which the presence of the cattle companies in the Oklahoma country was regarded by the "boomers," an editorial from the columns of the "Oklahoma War Chief" may be taken as a fair sample. After enumerating by name seven individuals, or companies, who occupied large ranges or pastures in the Oklahoma country and showing that, together, these seven pastures included no less than 3,117,880 acres, the "War Chief" comments as follows:

"Spell that out:—Three million, one hundred and seventeen thousand, eight hundred and eighty acres! Divide it up into 160 acre farms. Just 19,486 farms, with 120 acres left over for a soldiers' home! With a husband, wife and three children on each of these farms there would be in round numbers, a thriving, industrious population of nearly 100,000 producers! And this vast domain leased to seven cattle kings! What must be said of such a policy? Mr. Secretary Teller, Commissioner Price and Commissioner McFarland say those lands rent for two cents an acre, and that the total rental is $62,357.60. Who gets it? It is a well known fact that there is not an Indian tribe on the tract and that there has not been for years. Of whom, then, are the leases procured? If from the Government, has the money been covered into the United States treasury? We will present something handsome to the citizen or official who will prove that it has. Maybe it was paid last year to United States troops for tying United States citizens to wagon ends and dragging them like dead dogs out of that same country!

"But these are not the only public lands thus filched from the people by the cattle kings. There are other leases in Oklahoma not on this map. Why? An empire of public lands fenced by monopolists—millions of acres fattening countless herds——at a rental of two cents per acre!

"Do not ask why Oklahoma has not been opened to settlement. Rather face Jerusalem and pray, 'How long, Oh, Lord, how long?'"

homa country. It proved to be a popular appeal, and soon the pressure became so strong that President Cleveland issued a proclamation (August 7, 1885) ordering that such fences be removed. This was a moral victory for the "boomers," though, in effect, it was barren of results, for the cattle companies paid practically no attention to it.

207. **The Last Colonization Effort by the "Boomers."**—The "boomers" made another organized effort to settle in Oklahoma under the leadership of Couch during the ensuing autumn. They were removed by Lieut. Col. E. V. Sumner, 5th U. S. Cavalry, November 10, 1885. This was the last organized attempt to settle in Oklahoma without warrant of law.

208. **Railway Construction.**—In 1884 a new railway line had been projected for construction across the Indian Territory. The route to be traversed was southward from Arkansas City, Kansas, toward Fort Worth, Texas. This proposed line was to pass through the so-called Oklahoma country. In 1885 work on the construction of this line was begun. The building of such a railroad, together with the growing popularity of the Oklahoma movement, both in and out of Congress, inspired the intending settlers with the belief that lands of the Oklahoma country would soon be opened to settlement by act of Congress. For this reason there were no further "boomer" invasions, though the "boomers" were still active in agitating the legal opening of the country. In other words, the scene of the contest was largely transferred to Washington. Congress adjourned in 1886 without having taken any action on the Oklahoma bill which had been introduced at the beginning of the session.* The north and south railway line (Santa Fe) was completed in 1887. The Forty-

*The stockmen of the Cherokee Outlet were apprehensive that the agitation for the opening of unoccupied lands would be extended to those of the Outlet as well as those of the unassigned district. In December, 1886, the Cherokee Strip Live Stock Association endeavored to secure a renewal of its blanket lease on all of the lands of the Outlet, for a period of five years, though the lease which was then in force, still had two years to run before expiration.

ninth Congress adjourned without acting on the Oklahoma bill.

209. **Inter-Tribal Councils.**—The agitation for the opening of the Oklahoma country to white settlement and the activity of railroad builders had a very disquieting effect on the Indians of the Five Civilized Tribes. An inter-tribal council, held at Eufaula, in March, 1887, adopted resolutions of protest against the building of more than two lines of railway into or through the Indian Territory.* Another inter-tribal council was held at Fort Gibson in May, 1888.† The effect of these gatherings was to renew and strengthen the opposition of the Indians to the opening of the Oklahoma country to settlement.

210. **No-Man's Land.**—That part of the lands ceded to the United States by Texas in 1850 which was bounded on the north by Kansas and Colorado, on the east by the Cherokee Outlet, on the south by the Texas Panhandle, and on the west by New Mexico, was never attached to any state or territory until it became a part of Oklahoma in 1890. It remained a part of the wilderness of the Great Plains region until after the virtual disappearance of the buffalo and the retirement of the Indians to the their reservations about 1875. During the next ten years a few cattle ranchmen settled in this strip of public land which was not a part of any state or territory, and which, in time, came to be referred to most commonly as No-Man's-Land. In 1885 and 1886 there was a heavy tide of immigration into Southwestern Kansas and Southeastern Colorado. Soon the settlers began to swarm across the border into No-Man's-Land. In the spring of 1887 it was estimated that it contained a population of upwards of six thousand people. There were no Government land of-

*The Indians claimed that the building of more than two lines of railway into the Indian Territory was a violation of the treaties made between the Government and the several tribes in the spring and summer of 1866.

†Although these councils were called at the instance of the Five Civilized Tribes, by whose influence they were dominated, many other tribes were represented. At Fort Gibson there were delegations present from twenty-two tribes.

fices so that there could be no absolute ownership of lands. The settlers had no laws, either local or national. As a class they were peaceable and orderly but a land without laws always has its attractions for turbulent and unruly spirits, so desperadoes and horse-thieves soon made trouble in the No-Man's-Land settlements. The people promptly organized vigilance committees and put such a check on the outlaw class that a measure of order was restored.* The settlers could not file homestead claims because no Government land office had jurisdiction. Disputes over claims were numerous and the lawless element made claim jumping a regular business. Finally, the settlers held a meeting at Beaver,† and organized a Claim Board for the purpose of passing upon such disputes. A set of rules was also adopted for the guidance of the Claim Board in its actions.

211. **The Territory of Cimarron.**—Some of the settlers believed that a territorial government should be organized to supersede the makeshift vigilance committee and claim board organizations. The Claim Board issued a call for an election to be held in November, 1886, for the purpose of choosing delegates. These delegates met at Beaver, March 4, 1887, passed a declaratory act organizing the Territory of Cimarron. The members of the convention were constituted a legislative body, which proceeded to enact numerous laws. Many of the settlers did not take this territorial organization seriously. They believed that the sanction of Congress was necessary before such an organization could be made binding and effective. As a result of this sentiment, a convention was called at the village of Rothwell, a few miles from Beaver, in July, 1887. This convention drew up a petition to Congress,

*In No-Man's-Land, as elsewhere, when the people had to take the law into their own hands, the methods resorted to were sometimes harsh, but when evil doers had no respect for the rights of others, it was necessary to fill them with terror.

†The town of Beaver was the metropolis of the No-Man's-Land settlements. It had a population of about 700 in 1887. The nearest railway station was Dodge City, Kansas, distant about eighty miles. Beaver is now the county seat of Beaver County.

setting forth a statement of the existing conditions and asking for legislation needed to protect the interests of the settlers. Provision was also made for the election of a delegate to Congress. John Dale was elected as delegate. The faction which had supported the organization of the Territory of Cimarron and its legislative council, under the leadership of O. G. Chase, who was president of that body, held a rival election, choosing a new legislature of two houses and giving Chase a certificate of election as delegate to Congress. Neither Chase nor Dale was recognized, though it is probable that one of them would have had his claims to recognition favorably considered had it not been for the insistent rivalry of the other. The second legislature of Cimarron Territory was in session most of the time during the winter of 1887-88. Representative James Burns, of Missouri, introduced a bill in Congress to provide for the organization of the Territory of Cimarron. The legislative party, anticipating the passage of this measure, proceeded in November, 1888, to elect a full complement of territorial officers, also a new delegate to Congress. Nothing came of the movement, however. The No-Man's-Land country became a part of the Territory of Oklahoma on the approval of the Organic Act in the spring of 1890.

212. **The Oklahoma Question in Congress.**—When the Fiftieth Congress convened in December, 1887, the Oklahoma measure was again introduced and, as before, championed by its old friends, Weaver and Springer, together with Representative Charles Mansur, of Missouri. During the winter and early spring of 1888 the Oklahoma bill occupied a great deal of attention in Congress, but its friends were no less determined than its enemies, the latter being aided by strong lobbying forces. April 26, the opposition made a desperate effort to have the so-called No-Man's-Land atttached to Kansas, hoping thus to cripple the Oklahoma movement, but the attempt resulted in failure. At last, after a hard fight and many delays, the Oklahoma bill was passed by the House of Representatives, early in February, 1889.

213. **The Indian Delegation.**—During the last session of the Fiftieth Congress (in the winter of 1888-9) the Oklahoma bill was the center of constant interest. The Indians of the Five Civilized Tribes kept a strong delegation in Washington all winter.* Those who were opposed to the opening of Oklahoma were alert and active,† as well as the supporters of the measure.

*This delegation was composed of some of the most prominent members of the Five Civilized Tribes and included L. B. Bell ("Hooley"), W. P. Boudinot, George Sanders ("Soggy") and Stan W. Gray of the Cherokee Nation; George W. Harkins, B. W. Carter and Sam Paul, for the Chickasaw Nation; Campbell LeFlore for the Choctaw Nation, and Isparhechar and George W. Grayson for the Creek Nation. This interesting circle gathered once a week at a room not far distant from the national capitol for council. "Hooley" (Bell) could quote poetry in two or three languages, Boudinot was one of the most artistic performers on the piano in Washington, and "Soggy" (Sanders) could sing like a whole camp meeting. Isparhechar was described as "the noblest Indian of them all" in physical appearance.

One day this council of delegates from the Five Tribes invited some other Indians, who happened to be in Washington, to attend their weekly session. The latter, (mostly Sioux and Chippewa) came fantastically dressed in blankets, feathers and paint. "Soggy," who was very progressive though he could speak but little English and could only read and write in Cherokee, was thoroughly disgusted. Before any of his associates knew what was on his mind, and without waiting for the ceremonies incident to passing the pipe of peace, he took the floor and began to lecture the guests. He weighed three hundred pounds, and could be humorous or serious as he pleased, and, stepping out in front of the blanketed visitors he said, "No more buffalo—no deer!" Then, pausing and pointing to the garb of those whom he addressed, he shook his head with a look of contempt and exclaimed, "Blankets, no good! Feathers, no good! Paint! Ugh!" Then, suddenly the expression of his countenance changed to one of earnest and friendly advice, and, going through a most elaborate pantomine, he continued, "Indians must work—plow—raise corn—cattle—good clothes—get fat!" And with that he made a sweeping gesture which included his dignified fellow delegates as living examples of such precepts and laughed till his ponderous frame quivered. The visiting Indians looked ashamed, serious and amused at one and the same time. The other delegates from the Five Tribes looked at "Soggy" in amazement, for they had just listened to his first oration in English.

†A member of a Congressional Committee, addressing "Hooley," asked: "Mr. Bell, what do you do for a living?" With a seriocomic expression on his countenance "Hooley," who was probably well informed as to the failings of the average congressman, replied: "Various things. I practice law a little; farm some; run for office occasionally; now and then take a hand at poker and never miss a horse race if I can get to it."

214. **The Final Contest.**—The delegations from adjoining states began to gather in Washington to urge favorable action by the Senate. Meanwhile excitement on the border of the Oklahoma country was growing intense. Hundreds of intending settlers were gathering in anticipation of the legal opening of the lands which had so long been closed to settlement. Finally, the bill was reported out of the Senate Committee on Territories and there was every reason to expect that it would pass when the roll was called for a vote on the question. Then, Senator Preston B. Plumb, of Kansas, made an impassioned speech against the measure and it failed to receive the necessary number of votes.*

215. **Congress Finally Acts.**—The Oklahoma "boomers" in Washington, like those who had so long camped in wagons on the border, were defeated but not discouraged. They promptly tacked a "rider"† on the Indian Appropriation Bill which provided that the lands of the so-called Oklahoma country should be opened to settlement. The Senate was forced to accept the measure in that form. It also provided for the establishment of town sites and land offices but made no provision for the organization of a territorial government. By the terms of this act, which became a law March 3, 1889, the President was to issue a proclamation giving thirty days notice of the proposed opening.§

---

*It is believed that Senator Plumb was actuated by purely personal motives in his opposition to the measure. He was known to have anything but kindly feelings for some of the men who had been most active in promoting the Oklahoma movement. Then, too, his name was frequently mentioned as that of a heavy stockholder in some of the cattle companies, which had interests at stake on this issue.

†A "rider" is an amendment to a legislative measure which has little or no relation to the purpose of the original measure itself. In other words, it literally "rides" the measure, to which it is attached, to a successful passage otherwise impossible.

§On the 19th of January, 1889, the delegates from the Creek Nation formally relinquished all claims to the lands ceded by the treaty of 1866, including those embraced in the so-called Oklahoma country or unassigned lands, in consideration of a payment of $2,280,857.10. On the 16th of March, the Seminole executed a similar release and conveyance of their interest.

216. **The Opening Day Proclaimed.**—March 23, 1889, President Benjamin Harrison issued a proclamation setting the date of the proposed opening of the Oklahoma country to settlement on the twenty-second of April, at 12 M. For ten long years the agitation for the opening of Oklahoma had continued in spite of defeats and disappointments and discouragements that would have baffled any but the most determined of men. Success had at last crowned their efforts but at a cost in the way of patient endeavor, hardship and persecution which those who live in a later day can scarcely realize.

217. **The Opening of the Oklahoma Country.**—As the appointed day for the legal opening of the Oklahoma country to homestead settlement drew near, throngs of people began to assemble on the border of the promised land.* The multitude of intending settlers included many of the former "boomers," but they were in the minority. Thousands of those who came to claim a settler's right had known little and cared less of Oklahoma until the announcement of its opening to settlement was made through the medium of a presidential proclamation. So, the "boomer," who had spent his time and effort in the long and seemingly hopeless agitation and struggle for the right to settle in Oklahoma found himself crowded and jostled by thousands who had risked nothing in that effort and who were inclined to view him with suspicion and to discredit the part which he and his fellow "boomers" had played as pioneers.

218. **All Kinds of People.**—The assembled throng included people from practically every state in the Union—people of all classes and conditions of life—farmers, mechanics, laborers and professional men composing the greater number, though adventurers, gamblers and sharpers were numerous. It was a good natured crowd, in the main, and peace and good order generally prevailed. Although many doubtless

*Many intending settlers gathered along the southern boundary of the Cherokee Strip, on the north. Others congregated in the Iowa, Kickapoo and Pottawatomie reservations (on the east), in the Chickasaw Nation (on the south) and in the Cheyenne and Arapaho country (on the west).

came out of curiosity, or were actuated by a mercenary or speculative spirit, yet most of those who came did so because of their desire to secure farms and homes.

219. **The Impatient "Sooners."**—As the camps of the waiting settlers increased in number, some of them became anxious, lest, in the rush, they might fail to secure claims. Some, indeed, became so anxious that they disregarded the conditions set forth in the rules prescribed for the opening and, eluding the vigilance of the troops which patroled the border, slipped in and concealed themselves so that they might be near at hand when the legal hour for the opening arrived. These people were called "sooners" because they entered the country too soon.*

220. **The Most Thrilling Event in Oklahoma History.**—Promptly at noon, on the twenty-second day of April, 1889, the cavalrymen, who patroled the borders of the promised land, fired their carbines in the air as a signal that the settlers could move across the line. A mighty shout arose and then the race for claims and homes began. Hundreds crowded the trains of the single railway line that entered Oklahoma; thousands rode on fleet horses, lightly saddled; other thousands rode in buggies and buckboards, and others yet, in heavy farm wagons, drawn by slower teams; yes, and some even made the race on foot! The scene at the instant of starting was one never to be forgotten by those who witnessed it. But soon it began to resemble the utter rout of a defeated and retreating army rather than the orderly advance of an invading host. It was at once the culmination and the climax of the story of American pioneering.

221. **The Magic of Human Mastery.**—In the morning a solitude and a wilderness, as it had been through the ages; at midday, a surging tide of eager, earnest, excited humanity; in the evening, a land of many people, with here and there

*Many of the "sooners" were removed by the soldiers. Others, who succeeded in staying, were later dispossessed of their claims, either by the Land Office officials, or by the courts. A few are believed to have held their claims and proved up by perjury, but it is a noteworthy fact that these last have not prospered.

a tented townsite and thousands of campfires sending up the incense of peace! The next day the breaking plow began to turn the virgin prairie sod upon many homestead claims, while the merchant, the banker and the professional man opened shop and counting room and office beneath roofs of canvas or in rough board shanties. On the first Sabbath business was entirely suspended and thousands attended Divine services conducted by pioneer preachers in the open air. Thus was begun the industrial, commercial and social life of a new community.

Summary.—Like those of the previous period, a large part of the events of historical importance which occurred in the Indian Territory, during the years between 1875 and 1889, transpired in the western part. The pioneering of the range cattlemen and the agitation and repeated invasions of the "boomers," adds additional distinctiveness to the history of Oklahoma, and will leave its mark on the life and institutions of its people.

Questions Concerning the Seventh Period

1. What event signalized the doom and disappearance of the mighty herds of buffalo from the Great Plains? What effect did this have upon the Indian?

2. Tell the story of the range cattle industry in Oklahoma between 1875 and 1889. When, where and why was the Cherokee Strip Live Stock Association organized? What part did this Association play during the agitation of the proposed settlement of Oklahoma?

3. Briefly review the story of Capt. David L. Payne and the "boomers." Recount the struggles of the "boomers" in their endeavors to secure homes in Oklahoma. What qualities manifested by the Oklahoma "boomer" are elements of strength in the building of a state?

4. What were the Unassigned Lands? Where were they situated?

5. When did the outbreak of the Northern Cheyenne occur? What causes led to the restlessness and threatened outbreak of the Oklahoma Cheyenne in 1885?

6. Review the Spiechee War.

7. Give a brief history of No-Man's-Land.

8. Briefly outline the contest in Congress between 1884 and 1889 for the opening of Oklahoma to settlement. By what means was the measure finally passed through Congress?

9. When was the Oklahoma country opened to settlement? Tell the story of the settlement. What were the "sooners"?

10. What, if any, railroad building was done in Oklahoma during this period?

EIGHTH PERIOD

(1889-1907)

CHAPTER XIV

The Development of the Twin Territories

223.

BEGINNING of Negotiations to Purchase Indian Lands.—When the Oklahoma Bill was under discussion in the United States Senate, in February, 1889, a member of the Cherokee delegation which was then present in Washington suggested the appointment of a commission for the purpose of negotiating the purchase of the Cherokee Outlet (better known as the Cherokee Strip) by the Government. Accordingly, one section of the Oklahoma rider on the Indian Appropriation Bill (by the terms of which the Oklahoma lands were thrown open to settlement) provided for the appointment of a commission to enter into negotiations with the Indians of the Indian Territory for the relinquishment of surplus lands lying west of the Ninety-sixth Meridian. In July, 1889, President Harrison appointed the three members of the Commission* who met at Tahlequah (July 29) and

*The members of the Commission were Gen. Lucius Fairchild, Ex-Governor of Wisconsin; Gen. John F. Hartranft, Ex-Governor of Pennsylvania, and Hon. Alfred M. Wilson, of Arkansas. General Hartranft died in October, 1889, and Hon. W. G. Sayre, of Indiana, was appointed to fill the vacancy. In May, 1890, General Fairchild resigned, Ex-Governor George W. Jerome, of Michigan, being appointed as his successor.

opened negotiations with the Cherokee Nation for the relinquishment of its title to the Cherokee Outlet. The Commission soon left Tahlequah to return at the time of the regular session of the Cherokee Council, in November. Meanwhile the Commission visited the Iowa, the Sac and Fox, the Pottawatomie and Absentee Shawnee and also the Kickapoo. The Commission returned to Tahlequah where it spent two months in fruitless negotiations with the Cherokee Council, adjourning thence to Washington, in January, 1890, where its first report was rendered. In the spring of 1890 the Commission resumed negotiations with the Iowa, the Sac and Fox, the Pottawatomie and Absentee Shawnee, and the Kickapoo. In June, negotiations were opened with the Cheyenne and Arapaho. As a result of the work of this Commission, with the exception of the Kickapoo, all of these tribes agreed to accept allotments of land in severalty and permit the opening of the surplus lands of their reservations to settlement by the whites.

224. **The Wilderness Transformed.**—Spring was already far advanced when the Oklahoma country was opened for settlement, yet many of the settlers plowed a few acres and planted corn, cane and garden seeds on the sod before attempting to erect temporary homes. Later in the season, prairie hay was cut and stacked and, in the fall, a few small fields of wheat were sown. In the towns and villages, tents and shanties, which served temporarily for business houses and homes, soon gave place to substantial buildings. Meanwhile the people were dwelling quietly with no other law than that which was represented by the presence of a numerous retinue of deputy United States marshals, and several companies of troops from the Regular Army.*

*True to the instincts and traditions of the Anglo-Saxon race, however, the need of some form of municipal government was felt, and in several of the larger towns provisional city or village governments were effected by conventions and elections. Though lacking in the power of municipalities created by duly constituted authority, these organizations largely accomplished the desired ends by the wholesome influence which they exerted.

225. **Attempt to Organize the Territory.**—When the novelty of the first few weeks of pioneering had worn off, the people began to realize that many of the discomforts and inconveniences would continue until the establishment of a territorial or state government. This feeling resulted in an agitation in favor of some concerted action for the organization of a territorial government without waiting for Congressional sanction. Late in May a call was issued for a convention to meet at Guthrie, July 17, for the purpose of planning the organization of a territorial government. Sentiment was largely divided along local lines. There was much opposition in some quarters, culminating finally in the calling of another convention, which met at the town of Frisco (in Canadian county) and adopted resolutions of protest against the proposed organization of the territory without waiting for a formal act of Congress. The Guthrie convention met two days later and, after three days of stormy session, adjourned to meet again August 20, ninety-six delegates having been in attendance. When the convention re-assembled four weeks later there were one hundred delegates present, and very little prospect of harmonious action, though the supporters of the proposed territorial organization were in the majority. The convention proceeded to divide the settled part of the territory into counties and voting precincts, and also to frame an organic act with provision for the election of a full quota of territorial officers. The minority wanted the convention to adopt a memorial to Congress and then adjourn. Such a memorial was drafted and signed by the officers and delegates of the convention.* Through the influence and active opposition of those who did not favor radical action, the committee on election of territorial officers made no report. Thus, af-

*Many of the delegates were experienced politicians who had but recently migrated from the different states. The personal ambitions of delegates and local jealousies of the towns represented had much to do with the lack of unity and harmony in the convention. The memorial addressed to Congress, however, was a dignified statement of the need of an organized government—a state paper worthy of the best citizenship of any commonwealth in the Union.

ter all, the convention accomplished little more than memorializing Congress for relief.

226. **Visit of Congressional Party.**—On September 16, 1889, a committee of the United States House of Representatives consisting of Messrs. Samuel R. Peters and Bishop W. Perkins of Kansas; Chas. H. Mansur, of Missouri; John M. Allen, of Mississippi; Charles S. Baker, of New York, and William M. Springer, of Illinois, arrived in Oklahoma on a tour of investigation. The visiting Congressmen were tendered a reception at Guthrie, at which they were welcomed to Oklahoma generally, all parts of the Territory being represented.

227. **Congress Slow to Act.**—Congress convened in regular session in December. A strong delegation of representative Oklahoma people was on hand with memorials and petitions to urge the immediate passage of an act providing for the organization of the Territory of Oklahoma. But Congress was deliberate and the people of Oklahoma had to wait five long months for the passage of a bill which undoubtedly should have been passed as an emergency measure before the Christmas recess. The bill by which it was proposed to provide for the organization of a territorial form of government was not greatly different from the acts under which other territories had been organized. The people of Oklahoma were naturally very impatient at the seemingly unnecessary delay. The Organic Act was approved by the President and became a law, May 2, 1890.

228. **The Organic Act.**—The Organic Act provided that the Territorial Government should consist of executive, legislative and judicial departments. The Governor and Secretary of the Territory were to be appointed by the President of the United States; the other executive officers to be chosen by the Governor. The Territorial Legislative Assembly consisted of two branches, a Council of thirteen members and a House of Representatives of twenty-six members. The Territorial Supreme Court, as originally constituted, consisted of one chief justice and two associate justices, all to be ap-

pointed by the President, and all of whom also served as judges of the district courts.*

229. **Territorial Government Installed.**—Immediately after the approval of the Organic Act, President Harrison appointed the first Territorial officers.† George W. Steele, of Indiana, was named as governor.§ Governor Steele immediately came to Guthrie, which had been designated as the temporary capital, and entered upon the discharge of his official duties May 22. 1890.

GOV. GEORGE W. STEELE

230. **Organization of Counties.**—The Organic Act provided that there should be seven counties organized in the new Territory, the same to be designated by number until names should be adopted by the people. County Number One was afterwards named Logan; Number Two, Oklahoma; Number Three, Cleveland; Number Four, Canadian; Number Five, Kingfisher; Number Six, Payne, and Number Seven (which included all of what had been known as No-Man's-Land), was afterwards named Beaver. Governor Steele appointed a full set of county officers for each of these counties. By the

*The Supreme Court of Oklahoma was subsequently enlarged, first to five and then to seven members.

†Many of the people of Oklahoma were disappointed that President Harrison saw fit to disregard a declaration of the platform on which he had been nominated when he conferred part of his Oklahoma appointments on persons who were not residents of the Territory.

§George W. Steele was born in Fayette county, Indiana, in 1839. Most of his early life was spent at Marion, Indiana, where he attended the public schools. He subsequently attended Ohio Wesleyan University, at Delaware, Ohio. At the age of twenty years he began to read law in his father's office and, two years later, was admitted to the bar. He entered the volunteer military service in April, 1861, as a private, and served continuously until the close of the War, being mustered out of the army with the rank of lieutenant colonel. He served four terms in Congress (1881-1889). After he left Oklahoma he was again returned to Congress from his old district in Indiana, where he still lives (1908).

terms of the Organic Act, the statutes of Nebraska were adopted as the laws of the Territory of Oklahoma until otherwise provided by the Territorial Legislative Assembly.

231. **Population in 1890.**—The population of the Indian Territory, as ascertained by the Federal Census of June, 1890, was 179,321, of which number 50,616 were Indians. The population of Oklahoma at the same time was given at 61,834.

232. **The Ghost Dance Excitement.**—In 1890 there was much excitement among most of the Indian tribes west of the Mississippi on account of the alleged coming of an Indian Messiah who was promising to restore the old order of things by driving out the whites, bringing the buffalo back to the plains, etc. On account of their great expectations many of the tribes, including several of those residing in Western Oklahoma, held ceremonial conclaves which were known as "ghost dances." Among the Oklahoma Indians who became excited over the "ghost dance" were many of the Kiowa. At last Apiatan, an intelligent Kiowa leader, determined to know the truth of the reports which came to his people, left the reservation and went northward, where he visited the tribes of Dakota, Wyoming and Idaho. His journey finally led him to a remote part of Nevada, where he personally visited the reputed Messiah, and, by a few direct and pointed questions, demonstrated that he was an impostor, who was playing upon the credulity of trustful red men. The return and report of Apiatan dampened the ardor of the "ghost dance" enthusiasts so that no trouble followed among the tribes of Oklahoma, though it was the cause of threatened outbreaks in some other parts of the West.

APIATAN

233. **Election of the First Legislature.**—In compliance with the terms of the Organic Act, Governor Steele issued a

proclamation July 8, 1890, calling an election to be held August 5, for the purpose of choosing the members of the first Territorial Legislative Assembly. The campaign was a short one. Party lines were not very closely drawn, as local questions, such as the location of the capital and the public institutions, entered largely into consideration.*

234. **Session Delayed.**—The Legislative Assembly was to have convened and organized two weeks after the election (August 19) but owing to the deaths of Representatives C. M. Burke (August 8) and Milton W. Reynolds† (August 9) a new election was called for August 25 to fill the vacancies thus created. Owing to the lack of quorum the two houses of the Assembly were not finally organized for business until August 29, 1890.

*The political complexion of the Legislative Assembly was as follows: House of Representatives, fourteen Republicans, eight Democrats and four Farmers' Alliance; Council, six Republicans, five Democrats, one Farmers' Alliance and one Independent.

†Milton W. Reynolds was born in Chemung county, New York, May 23, 1833. Most of his early life was spent in Michigan, whither his parents moved when he was but three years old. He was educated at the University of Michigan. In 1857 he migrated to Nebraska and located at Omaha. He farmed, edited a newspaper and took an active part in politics, serving two terms in the Nebraska Legislature. He frequently acted as a special correspondent of eastern newspapers, and it was while acting in that capacity that he visited the peace council at Fort Smith in the fall of 1865, and also that of the Medicine Lodge in the fall of 1867. His interest in the Oklahoma country thus dated from a comparatively remote period. In 1865 he moved from Nebraska to Kansas, settling at Lawrence and, six years later, at Parsons, at both of which places he was engaged in the newspaper business. He represented Labette county in the Kansas Legislature, and also served one term as a regent of the University of Kansas. His interest in the Indian Territory was always active. As early as 1872, in a magazine article entitled "The Indian State," he outlined the future development of what is now the State of Oklahoma with a remarkably prophetic vision. He is said to have written more on the Oklahoma question than any other single writer, especially in his work as a staff writer on the Kansas City Times, much of his writing appearing under the nom-de-plume of "Kicking Bird." He came to Guthrie, April 22, 1889, where he aided in the publication of the Daily State Herald for a few months. In July following he established the Edmond Sun, and, a few weeks later, he selected a homestead near Edmond. He took an active part in the affairs of the new Territory. August 5, 1890, he was elected as member-at-large to the Territorial House of Representatives. His death occurred four days later.

235. **Organization of the Legislative Assembly.**—In the organization of the two houses of the Assembly, as in the election of the members of those bodies, party lines were not closely drawn, local interests being considered of greater import. As a result of these conditions, both the president ofthe Council (George W. Gardenhire) and the speaker of the House of Representatives (Arthur N. Daniels) were selected from the minority (Alliance) party.

236. **Attempt to Change Location of Territorial Capital.**—The Organic Act provided that the first session of the Legislative Assembly should meet at Guthrie and that the capital of the Territory should be located at that place until otherwise provided by enactment of the Legislative Assembly. The spirit of rivalry between Guthrie and Oklahoma City had been pronounced, and it was generally understood that there would be an effort made to change the location of the capital to Oklahoma City. Indeed, that was the single issue in the contest which preceded the organization of both houses of the First Legislative Assembly. In that contest the partizans of Oklahoma City were victorious. Four days after the organization of the Legislative Assembly there was introduced into the Council a bill, the purpose of which was to provide for the removal of the Territorial capital to Oklahoma City after February 1, 1891. A month later the bill, having passed both houses. was sent to the Governor for his approval.*

237. **Governor Vetoes Capital Removal.**—Governor Steele was not hasty in his consideration of the bill by which it was proposed to change the location of the capital of the Territory. He listened to representations from both sides but did not commit himself in a message until the time allowed by law for executive approval or disapproval had nearly ex-

*The history of the events which transpired in legislative circles during the time that the capital removal measure was under consideration is not particularly creditable to either the supporters or the opponents of the bill. Schemes, plots, counter plots and intrigues, many of them of most despicable and disgraceful character, followed one another in rapid succession.

pired.* Then he sent a message in which he withheld his approval and stated his reasons for doing so.† The whole incident was peculiarly unfortunate for Governor Steele, as, no matter what his decision might have been, he was certain to arouse the suspicions and incur the hostility of the friends of the defeated city.

238. **Railway Companies Furnish Seed Wheat.**—In the fall of 1890, many of the settlers in Oklahoma wished to sow wheat, but there was little or no seed wheat in the Territory and money was scarce. The Santa Fe and Rock Island Railway Companies together shipped in 25,000 bushels of seed wheat which was loaned to the farmers without interest to be paid back after the crop was harvested the following season.

239. **Election of Delegate to Congress.**—The Organic Act provided that Oklahoma should have an elective delegate in Congress, who should be entitled to all of the privileges of a seat in the United States House of Representatives, except that of voting. The first election of a Territorial delegate was held November 4, 1890. The Republican convention which met at Guthrie, October 18, had nominated David A. Harvey, of Oklahoma City for full term of the Fifty-Second Congress, and also for the unexpired portion of the Fifty-

*As the time wore on, interest in the probable action of the Governor developed into a feeling of feverish anxiety. Although both houses of the Assembly were nominally in session, they each virtually ceased to transact any business. The lobbies were crowded with an eager, expectant throng that waited in almost breathless silence for the words of the Governor's message—words which, in the over-wrought imagination of the hour, were supposed to be freighted with fate for the two aspiring rival communities, aye, words which by many on both sides were supposed to be filled with promise of certain prosperity and greatness to the favored town, while the same words were supposed to be equally prophetic of the doom and decadence of the defeated town. So short-sighted is human judgment in the heat of passionate conflict.

†The people of Guthrie were elated. A holiday, general jollification and impromptu reception to Governor Steele followed the announcement of his veto of the bill which had proposed to move the capital away from their town. There was a corresponding feeling of depression at Oklahoma City, where the people felt that they had been deprived of the fruits of a hard won legislative victory.

first Congress. The Democratic convention, which met at Norman, October 9, had nominated J. G. McCoy, of El Reno, for the long term, and James L. Matthews, of Payne County, for the short term. The election resulted in the choice of Mr. Harvey for both terms by a plurality of two thousand votes.*

DAVID A. HARVEY

240. **Subsequent Work of the Legislative Assembly.**—After the end of the capital removal contest, the Assembly found time to attend to other business. The statutes of Nebraska, which had been made to apply in Oklahoma by the Organic Act, were amended and modified to suit local needs and conditions. Provision was made for the establishment of a Territorial University at Norman, an Agricultural and Mechanical College at Stillwater, and a Normal School at Edmond. The legislative session ended in February.

241. **The School Lands.**—The act of Congress under which the lands of the Oklahoma country had been opened to settlement, provided that two sections of each township (Sections 16 and 36) should be reserved for the benefit of the public schools. When all of the vacant public lands which were

*David A. Harvey was born at Stewiacke, Nova Scotia, in 1845. His parents migrated to Ohio when he was six years old. At the age of sixteen he enlisted in the Fourth Ohio Volunteer Cavalry, leaving the army after three and one-half years of continuous service, at the end of the Civil War. He then entered Miami University. He studied law and was admitted to the bar in 1869. He located at Topeka, Kansas, where he practiced law and served as city attorney and probate judge. He early became interested in the Oklahoma movement and was active in the agitation for the opening of Oklahoma for settlement. He located at Oklahoma City, April 22, 1889. He was nominated for delegate to Congress by the Territorial Republican convention at Guthrie, October 18, 1890, and on November 4, he was elected to both long and short terms, taking his seat when the Fifty-first Congress re-convened in December, 1890, and serving till the end of the Fifty-second Congress, March 3, 1893. Mr. Harvey subsequently located at Miami, where he still lives (1908).

open to homestead entry had been taken up, there yet remained unoccupied over 100,000 acres of school land, much of it being fine land with fertile soil. Immediately after the organization of the Territorial government, Governor Steele was beseiged with inquiries as to the disposition of the school lands, many people expecting that such lands would be sold by the Territory at low prices, as most school lands had been sold by the various states. The Territory did not have the right to sell its school lands, however. Offers were then made to lease such lands from the Territory. Governor Steele, doubting his authority to act, referred the matter to the Secretary of the Interior, upon whose recommendation Congress passed an act authorizing the Territory to lease its school lands, applying the proceeds from such rentals to the support of the public schools. The policy thus adopted has been followed ever since as new lands were opened to settlement.

241a. Additional Lands Opened to Settlement.—September 22, 1891, the surplus lands of the Iowa, the Sac and Fox and the Pottawatomie-Shawnee reservations were opened to settlement, the Indians of those tribes having had their lands allotted in severalty. These reservations together contained 868,414 acres. From the lands thus opened to settlement, the counties of Lincoln and Pottawatomie* were formed, the counties of Logan, Oklahoma and Cleveland were completed by the addition of a tier of townships on the east of each and Payne county was enlarged by the addition of that part which lies south of the Cimarron River. The lands were opened to settlement by proclamation of President Harrison and the exciting scenes of the race for claims at the opening of the Unassigned Lands were re-enacted. The town sites of the county seat towns (Chandler and Tecumseh) were selected and reserved from homestead entry.

*Lincoln county was designated in the executive proclamation as County A, and Pottawatomie county as County B. The names of Lincoln and Pottawatomie were selected by the people at the general election held in November, 1892.

242. **End of Governor Steele's Administration.**—Governor Steele having tendered his resignation, to take effect on the appointment of his successor, President Harrison appointed Justice A. J. Seay,* of the Oklahoma Supreme Court, as governor of the Territory, October 18, 1891.

GOV. A. J. SEAY

243. **The Settlement of the Cheyenne and Arapaho Country.**—The Cheyenne and Arapaho Indians having accepted allotments of lands in severalty, the surplus lands of their reservation were thrown open to settlement April 19, 1892. This reservation contained 3,500,562 acres from which the counties of Blaine, Custer, Washita, Dewey, Roger Mills and parts of Canadian, Kingfisher, Beckham and Ellis were afterwards formed.†

244. **Political Campaign of 1892.**—There were three tickets in the field in Oklahoma during the campaign of 1892.

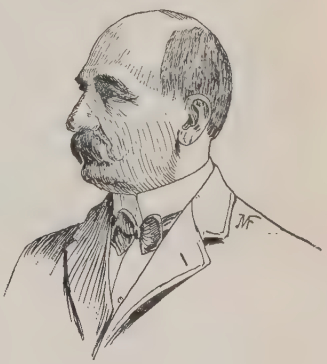
*Abraham Jefferson Seay was born near Lynchburg, Virginia, November 28, 1832. When he was three years old his parents moved to Missouri, settling in Osage county. His early life was typical of the son of a pioneer family. He attended neighborhood schools, helped build the first railway track west of the Mississippi, saved money, bought a few books, taught a country school, attended an academy at Steelville, read law and was admitted to the bar in April, 1861. At the outbreak of the Civil War he promptly enlisted in the volunteer military service and was soon commissioned a lieutenant. He was in the active service throughout the war, being mustered out with the rank of major. After the close of the War he took up the practice of law. He always took an active part in politics, and was frequently nominated, as a republican, for various local and state offices and for congress. He served twelve years as judge of the 9th Missouri district. When Oklahoma was organized he was appointed associate justice of the Supreme Court by President Harrison, and was later appointed governor. Governor Seay still lives at Kingfisher (1908).

†The opening of the Cheyenne and Arapaho country to settlement was attended by the same exciting scenes which characterized the opening of other reservations and districts.

The Democrats nominated O. H. Travis for delegate to Congress. The Populist nominee was N. H. Ward. The Republican candidate was Dennis T. Flynn, of Guthrie. The Republicans were successful, electing not only the delegate to Congress but also a majority of both branches of the Legislative Assembly.

245. **The Second Legislative Assembly.**—The second session of the Territorial Legislative Assembly convened at Guthrie in January, 1893. The session was a comparatively quiet one though a large number of laws were passed.

246. **Retirement of Governor Seay.**—Shortly after the beginning of President Cleveland's administration in May, 1893, Governor Seay was removed from office and William C. Renfrow,* of Norman, was appointed to fill the vacancy thus created.



GOV. W. C. RENFROW

247. **Settlement of the Cherokee Strip.**—After several years of negotiation, the Cherokee Nation, through its principal chief and council, ceded its claims to the Cherokee Outlet (better known as the Cherokee Strip), May 19, 1893.† Together with the surplus lands of the Pawnee and Tonkawa reservations, the Cherokee Strip was opened to settlement September 16, 1893. The lands

*William Cary Renfrow was born at Smithfield, North Carolina, March 15, 1845. He was educated in the common schools, but left school to enter the Confederate Army. In 1865 he moved to Arkansas, where he lived until the opening of the Oklahoma country to settlement, when he moved to Norman and engaged in banking. He served as governor of Oklahoma from May 7, 1893, to May 24, 1897. Since retiring from office Governor Renfrow has been largely interested in mining operations in Southwestern Missouri.

†The consideration for such cession by the Cherokee Nation was $8,300,000.00, to be paid in five annual installments, beginning March 4, 1895, with interest at four per cent. on deferred payments, and, in addition, $300,000.00 to be paid to the Cherokee at once, besides $110,000.00 to be paid to the Pawnee and Tonkawa.

thus opened to settlement amounted to 5,698,140 acres.* From this great tract were afterwards formed the counties of Alfalfa, Garfield, Grant, Harper, Major, Woods, Woodward and Pawnee, the greater portions of Kay and Noble and parts of Payne and Ellis.

THE RACE FOR CLAIMS, SEPTEMBER 16, 1893

248. **The Dawes Commission.**—November 1, 1893, Ex-Senator Henry L. Dawes, of Massachusetts, Meredith H. Kidd, of Indiana, and Archibald S. McKennon, of Arkansas, were appointed by President Cleveland as members of the Commission to treat with the Indians of the Five Civilized Tribes with a view to securing agreements to take land in severalty and give up the privilege of maintaining independent tribal governments.†

*Intending settlers were required to register before entering the race for claims. This rule was established for the purpose of heading off the "sooners" who had been too numerous and troublesome at the previous land openings.

†This commission succeeded the one which, during the administration of President Harrison, had successfully negotiated similar agreements with a number of the tribes in Oklahoma Territory. Its activities were henceforth confined exclusively to the affairs of the Five Civilized Tribes.

249. Single and Separate Statehood.—Shortly after the Fifty-third Congress convened, Delegate Flynn introduced a bill to provide for the admission of Oklahoma and the Indian Territory into the Union as one state. When the House Committee on Territories had finished its consideration of the measure, however, the bill, as reported back to the House of Representatives, provided for statehood for Oklahoma alone.* In January, 1894, Representative Thomas C. McRae, of Arkansas, introduced a new bill for the admission of Oklahoma with the original limits of the Indian Territory and providing for the sale of the surplus lands of the Indian reservations.† At the beginning of the last session of the Fifty-third Congress, in 1894, Senator Berry, of Arkansas, introduced a bill for the organization of the Indian Territory under the name of the "Territory of Indianola."§

250. Political Campaign of 1894.—The Republicans renominated Dennis T. Flynn for delegate to Congress. The

*From that time on the dispute between the advocates of the admission of the two territories as one state (single statehood) and those who favored the admission of each as a separate state (separate statehood) grew in intensity. Many who had been counted as supporters of the single state proposition wavered and went over to the opposition, probably for the reason that separate statehood seemed to offer an earlier and easier solution of the problem. Others, especially among the professional politicians, for purely personal reasons, favored two states rather than one.

†Representative Joseph Wheeler, of Alabama, who was chairman of the House Committee on Territories, was strongly opposed to single statehood, always maintaining that there should be two states. He was largely responsible for the changes in the Flynn Bill, and there was a disposition to treat the matter as a party question. It was largely for the purpose of neutralizing such sentiments among the Democrats in Congress, that a Democratic Territorial convention was held at Perry, January 24, 1894, to discuss and make an authentic declaration upon the subject. Strong resolutions demanding single statehood were adopted. The Indians of the Five Civilized Tribes, who were opposed to statehood, and especially to single statehood, then called an international council, which was held at Eufaula early in March. The council adopted resolutions of protest against statehood.

§Senator Faulkner, of West Virginia, who was chairman of the Senate Committee on Territories, was a pronounced advocate of single statehood for the two territories, so the Berry Bill was never reported.

Democratic nominee was Joseph Wisby, of Guthrie. The Populist candidate was Ralph Beaumont. The election resulted in the return of Delegate Flynn for another term. The Republicans also elected a majority of both branches of the Legislative Assembly.

251. **Opening of the Kickapoo Lands.**—In May, 1895, the surplus lands of the Kickapoo country were thrown open to settlement. The lands of the Kickapoo reservation embraced 85,000 acres and were situated between the North Canadian and Deep Fork in Lincoln, Oklahoma and Pottawatomie counties. The opening took place with the usual race for claims.

252. **Greer County.**—The Organic Act provided that the Greer County tract, the title to which had long been in dispute between the government of the United States and the state of Texas, should be settled by a suit brought in the United States Supreme Court. The Texas authorities had always claimed the North Fork of the Red River as a part of the boundary between that state and the Indian Territory. The Federal authorities, on the other hand, had claimed that, under the terms of the treaty with Spain (1819) the Red River proper formed the boundary line between the Indian Territory (or Oklahoma) and Texas as far west as the 100th meridian. At various times, for many years, the settlement of this vexed question had been agitated. This tract which was bounded on the north and east by the North Fork of the Red River, on the south by the Red River proper and on the west by the 100th Meridian, contained nearly 1,500,000 acres in all.* In assertion of the state's claim to this tract of land, the Texas Legislature, in 1860, had named it Greer county, in honor of a former governor of that state. Stockmen began to range cattle on the Greer county lands within a few years after the disappearance of the buffalo, the first permanent settlements being made in 1880 and 1881. In the summer of 1885 the settlers were warned to leave by the Fed-

*The original Greer county tract included parts of Beckham and Jackson counties as well as all of the present county of Greer.

eral authorities, some of them being removed as intruders by the troops. The settlers soon returned, however, and were not again molested. In 1888, the population having become sufficient, the county of Greer was duly organized under the laws of the state of Texas. The case was finally decided adversely to the claims of Texas, in 1895. Greer county was thereupon reorganized, by act of Congress approved May 4, 1896, under the laws of Oklahoma, its citizens participating in the Oklahoma elections for the first time in November, 1896.

253. **The Statehood Question.**—The question of securing the admission of one or both Territories into the Union as a state, continued to be an absorbing topic of discussion. Sentiment was greatly divided as to whether it should be statehood for Oklahoma alone or for both Territories combined.*

JAMES Y. CALLAHAN

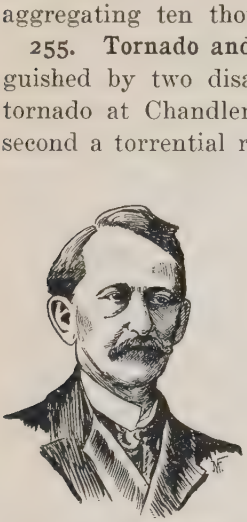
254. **The Political Campaign of 1896.**—The presidential campaign of 1896, which was noted for its enthusiasm and excitement, had its effect in Oklahoma, though the people of the Territory had no voice in national affairs. Delegate Dennis T. Flynn was re-nominated by the Republicans. The Democrats and Populists united in nominating J. Y. Callahan,† of Kingfisher county, for delegate. The

*January 8, 1896, a statehood convention was held in Oklahoma City. Two separate calls had been issued for the meeting, one by the separate statehood advocates and the other by those of single statehood, and a wrangle began as soon as it convened. Both calls were read and two chairmen were elected by the rival factions. Then pandemonium broke loose. The scene which followed was described, not inaptly, by a press correspondent as "resembling a riot in a lunatic asylum more than anything else." The meeting broke up in disorder, being arbitrarily adjourned by one of the chairmen, but the delegates continued to wrangle until the lights were turned out.

†James Yancy Callahan was born in Dent county, Missouri, December 19, 1852. He was reared on a farm and educated in the common schools, and he has been a farmer most of his life. In 1885 he moved to Stanton county, Kansas, where he lived until 1892, when he moved to Kingfisher county, Oklahoma. While living in Kansas he served two terms as register of deeds. Mr. Callahan now lives (1908) at Enid, where he is engaged in business.

combined forces of the two parties gave promise of certain victory. Mr. Callahan was elected by a plurality of less than fifteen hundred, though the fusion forces elected every member of the upper house and all but one of the members of the lower house of the Legislative Assembly by pluralities aggregating ten thousand.

255. Tornado and Flood.—The spring of 1897 was distinguished by two disastrous storms in Oklahoma, the first a tornado at Chandler, in the latter part of March, and the second a torrential rain or cloudburst near Guthrie, in May, which caused the overflow of the Cottonwood and the Cimarron at that place. A number of lives were lost at both places and there was also great destruction of property. The people of more favored parts of Oklahoma were quick to offer substantial assistance to those of the stricken communities.



GOV. C. M. BARNES

256. Barnes Succeeds Renfrow as Governor.—As the term of Governor Renfrow drew to a close, considerable interest was manifested by the people of Oklahoma in the selection of his successor by the

*Cassius M. Barnes was born in Livingston county, New York, in 1845. During the period of his early childhood his parents migrated to Michigan, where he was educated. At the outbreak of the Civil War, although but a mere boy, he enlisted, serving in various capacities in an engineer company, in the quartermaster's department and in the military telegraph corps. Shortly after the close of the War he located at Little Rock, Arkansas, where he was engaged in business for a time. He took an active interest in politics and held several appointive Federal official positions. When Oklahoma was opened to settlement he came to Guthrie as receiver of public moneys at the United States Land Office, a position which he held for four years. In 1894 he was elected as a member of the Territorial House of Representatives and served as speaker of that body during its session in 1895. He also served as a member of the House in the session in 1897. In April, 1897, he was appointed Governor of Oklahoma by President McKinley, serving four years. Since his retirement from that office Governor Barnes has been twice elected as mayor of Guthrie, where he still lives (1908).

new President, William McKinley. The most active aspirant for the appointment was Cassius M. Barnes, of Guthrie. The selection of Dennis T. Flynn, who was defeated in his race for re-election as delegate to Congress in the preceding election, was also warmly urged by many citizens of Oklahoma. Mr. Barnes was appointed. The inauguration of the new governor occurred May 24, 1897.

CHAPTER XV

(1897-1907)

Development of the Twin Territories (Continued).

257.

THE Two Territories in the Spanish War.—The outbreak of the Spanish-American War, in the spring of 1898, found thousands of young men in the Indian Territory and Oklahoma who were eager to enlist in the military service. Under the first call for volunteers, two troops of cavalry were authorized, one in each Territory.* Under the second call for volunteers, Oklahoma was permitted to raise a battalion of four companies, which became a part of the First Regiment of Territorial Volunteers, the other two battalions being raised in Arizona and New Mexico. A number of young men in both Indian Territory and Oklahoma enlisted in the volunteer service from adjoining states.

CAPT. R. B. HUSTON

258. **Railroad Building Resumed.**—The year 1898 saw considerable activity in railroad building, almost the first since the beginning of the financial panic of 1893. The first lines to resume active building

*The two troops, when mustered into the service, became a part of the First Regiment of United States Volunteer Cavalry, the organization which became better known as the "Rough Riders."

operations were the St. Louis & San Francisco, which extended its line from Sapulpa southwestward to Oklahoma City, and the Choctaw, Oklahoma & Gulf, which built westward from Fort Reno to Weatherford, and began the extension of its line from McAlester eastward. The railway development thus begun, continued with but few interruptions until there were over six thousand miles of track in the two Territories.

CAPT. ALLYN K. CAPRON

259. Political Changes.—The Republicans re-nominated the former delegate, Dennis T. Flynn, in 1898. The Democratic-Populist nominee was Hon. James R. Keaton, of Oklahoma City. Mr. Flynn was elected by a large majority. At the same time the Republicans succeeded in electing a large majority of the members of both houses of the Territorial Legislative Assembly.

260. The Curtis Bill.—In February, 1899, the Curtis Bill, so-called, which provided for a number of radical innovations in the administration of affairs in the Indian Territory, passed both houses of Congress and was approved by the President. Among other changes, it provided that all tribal

A part of the regiment saw active service in Cuba, at Las Guasimas, El Caney and San Juan Hill. The Oklahoma troop was commanded by Capt. Robert B. Huston, of Guthrie. Captain Huston was born in Ohio in 1865. An attorney by profession, he took great interest in military affairs and held the rank of lieutenant colonel in the first militia regiment organized in Oklahoma. In the Battle of San Juan Hill, he was in command of his battalion after Major Brodie was wounded. After the close of the War with Spain, Captain Huston was recommissioned in the U. S. Volunteers for service in the Philippines, where he died in 1900. Capt. Allyn K. Capron, who organized and commanded the Indian Territory troop, was born in 1870. His father was an officer in the Regular Army and he chose to follow the same profession. Having had no opportunity to go to the West Point Military Academy, he enlisted in the Regular Army as a private and won his commission by promotion from the ranks. He was killed in the Battle of San Juan Hill. Captains Huston and Capron were both regarded as fine officers. They held the affection as well as the respect of their men.

courts should be abolished; that the supervision of the tribal common schools should be turned over to a superintendent appointed by the Secretary of the Interior, and that tribal governments should cease to exist after January 1, 1906. Prof. John D. Benedict, of Illinois, was appointed as superintendent of Indian schools in the Indian Territory. Superintendent Benedict at once began the reorganization of the schools of the Five Civilized Tribes of which he continued in active control even after Oklahoma became a state.

261. **The Northwestern Normal School.**—The Fifth Legislative Assembly made provision for the establishment of a normal school at Alva. Controversy over the establishment of the school finally led to litigation but the Supreme Court of the Territory sustained the establishment of the school as regular and legal.

262. **Live Stock Quarantine Established.**—Among the laws enacted by the Legislative Assembly in the session of 1899, was one which provided for the creation of a live stock sanitary commission with authority to establish quarantine regulations by means of which the ravages of the Southern cattle fever might be controlled.*

263. **Population in 1900.**—According to the Federal census of June, 1900, the Indian Territory had 392,060 inhabitants while Oklahoma had 398,331. The largest town in the Territories had a population of barely 10,000.

264. **The Free Homes Bill Passed.**—June 17, 1900, the measure which provided for free homesteads to the settlers on the Iowa, Sac and Fox, and Pottawatomie reservations and the lands of the Cherokee Strip, which had been championed for several years by Delegate Flynn,† was finally passed and

*During the first two years after the enactment of the live stock quarantine law, the duties of the Commission were performed by the Board of Regents of the Agricultural and Mechanical College. The Live Stock Sanitary Commission has always co-operated with the quarantine officers of the United States Department of Agriculture.

†Dennis T. Flynn was born at Phoenixville, Pennsylvania, in 1861. He was educated at Buffalo, New York, where he also studied law. After his admission to the bar, he settled at River-

approved. It was authoritatively stated at the time that the passage of this measure saved the people of Oklahoma fifteen million dollars.

265. **Political Campaign of 1900.**—Delegate Flynn was again nominated by the Republicans. The Democrats and Populists nominated Robert A. Neff, of Kay County. The election resulted in the choice of Mr. Flynn for another term. The Democrats elected a majority of the members of the upper house of the Legislative Assembly, while the Republicans elected a majority of the members of the lower house.

DENNIS T. FLYNN

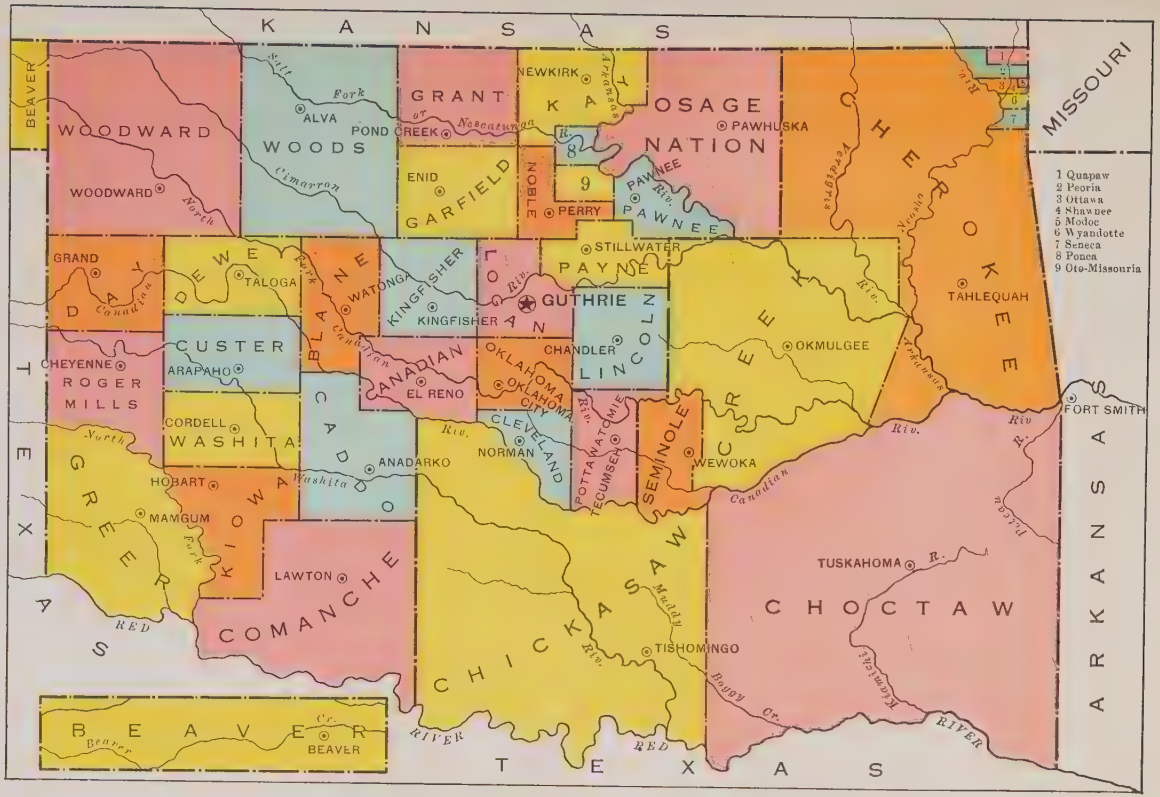
266. **The Crazy Snake "Uprising."**—Many of the uneducated and conservative members of the Creek Nation refused to choose allotments and they resented the departure from their old ways, such as the substitution of United States courts for their own tribal courts. Early in 1901, these dissatisfied Indians (mostly fullbloods) pro-

side, Iowa. In 1882 he again migrated, locating at Kiowa, Kansas, where, in addition to practicing law he established and successfully conducted the Kiowa Herald and also served as postmaster. When Oklahoma was opened to settlement Mr. Flynn settled at Guthrie, where he was the first postmaster. In 1890 he received a strong vote for the nomination for Territorial delegate to Congress in the Republican convention. In 1892 he was nominated and elected as delegate to the Fifty-third Congress. In 1894 he was re-nominated and re-elected. In 1896 he was re-nominated, but by reason of the fusion of the Democratic and Populist parties, the Republicans were in a hopeless minority, though Mr. Flynn ran far ahead of his ticket. In 1898 and again in 1900 he was re-nominated and re-elected. During the last mentioned year he secured the passage of the free homestead bill. In 1902 he declined to stand as a candidate for renomination. Since 1903 Mr. Flynn has been engaged in the active practice of law in Oklahoma City.

claimed Chitto Harjo, or Crazy Snake, their hereditary chief, as he was of the old Muskogee royal line. He forthwith proceeded to call a session of the National Council consisting of the House of Kings and the House of Warriors and to proclaim the re-establishment of the ancient laws, courts and customs of the Creek Nation. Sensational newspaper correspondents spread far and wide the story of an impending "uprising" and so wrought upon the public imagination that the Government troops were ordered to the scene and Chitto Harjo and a number of his followers were arrested and confined for a time.

CHITTO HARJO

267. The Public Building Bill.—When the Sixth Legislative Assembly convened at Guthrie, in January, 1901, there was a well defined feeling on the part of many of the members that the time had come when the Territory should locate and build several state charitable and penal institutions, including schools for the blind, deaf and feeble-minded children, an asylum for the insane, a penitentiary, and a reformatory or school for incorrigible youth. It was proposed to so distribute the location of these institutions as to control the largest possible number of votes in the two houses of the Assembly. The lines of difference between the supporters of the Public Building Bill and those who were opposed to it were sharply defined. The legislative contest which distinguished the consideration of this measure was one long to be remembered. Obstructive tactics were resorted to, but the bill finally passed. It failed to receive the approval of Governor Barnes, however, because of the protests which were made against the measure. The location and establishment of a university pre-



Oklahoma and Indian Territories, 1901

paratory school at Tonkawa, which was secured as the result of a combination with the supporters of the Public Building Bill, was approved by the Governor.

268. Discovery of Oil and Gas.—Early in 1901, the prospectors who had been boring for oil and gas in the vicinity of Red Fork, Tulsa and Sapulpa and other towns in the Creek Nation, began to secure results which exceeded their most sanguine expectations. The development of the oil and gas industry in Eastern Oklahoma dates from that time, though considerable prospect work had been done for some years before that time.

GOV. W. M. JENKINS

269. William M. Jenkins Appointed Governor.—At the expiration of Governor Barnes' term, President McKinley appointed William M. Jenkins,* who had been Secretary of the Territory for four years, as Governor of Oklahoma.

270. The Southwestern Normal School.—The Sixth Legislative Assembly passed an act for the establishment of a normal school in the southwestern part of the Territory and providing that the same should be located by a commission to be composed of three persons appointed by the Governor. Governor Barnes appointed three persons as members of such a commision just before retiring from office. Governor Jenkins likewise appointed a commis-

*William M. Jenkins was born in Stark county, Ohio, in 1856, of Quaker parentage. He was educated in the public schools and at Mt. Union College. While teaching school he read law. He located at Arkansas City, Kansas, in 1888, and engaged in the practice of law. In 1893 he secured a homestead in Kay county when the Cherokee Strip was opened to settlement. He was appointed Secretary of the Territory by President McKinley in June, 1897. After filling that position for nearly four years he was appointed governor of Oklahoma, April 15, 1901. Since his retirement from the Governor's office he has been engaged in farming in Kay county, where he still lives (1908).

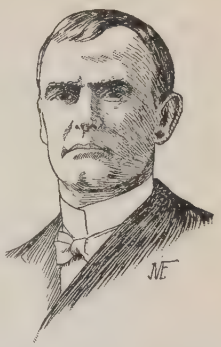
sion for the same purpose shortly after his inauguration. The commission named by Governor Barnes decided upon the town of Weatherford, in Custer county, as the location for the school, while the commission named by Governor Jenkins decided in favor of the town of Granite, in Greer county. The matter was finally taken to the Supreme Court of the Territory which decided that the commission first appointed was legally qualified and the location of the normal in Weatherford was therefore confirmed.

271. **Opening of the Kiowa-Comanche and Wichita-Caddo Reservations.**—The long delayed opening of the reservations of the Kiowa, Comanche and Apache of the Plains and of the Wichita, Caddo and affiliated tribes, embracing 3,460,000 acres of land, was finally consummated in the summer of 1901. In order to prevent the abuses and excesses which had attended former land openings, the Secretary of the Interior directed that all persons desiring to take up homesteads on the surplus lands of these reservations should be allowed to register; that the names so registered should be written on cards and enclosed in envelopes, which, in turn, were to be thoroughly shuffled and then drawn out and numbered, the applicants being permitted to file on claims at the land office in the order in which their names were thus drawn. Two general registration offices were opened, one at El Reno and one at Fort Sill. Registration began July 9, and the drawing began August 6. Over 160,000 persons registered. The whole proceeding was carried on in an orderly manner that was in striking contrast with some of the scenes which characterized earlier land openings.*

272. **Three New Counties.**—Three new counties were thus added to the settled portion of Oklahoma, namely, Caddo,

*Besides the lands that were allotted to the Indians, 480,000 acres were reserved for Indian pasture lands, the Fort Sill military reservation was increased to 56,000 acres and a Federal forest reserve of 58,000 acres in the Wichita Mountains was set aside by executive order a short time before the opening. Five years later the Indian pasture lands were sold to the highest bidders in tracts of 160 acres to each.

Comanche and Kiowa. The Government laid out the town sites of the county seats of the three new counties (Anadarko, Lawton and Hobart) selling the lots to the highest bidders, the proceeds from such sales being used in the building of court houses and school houses, installing water works, and for other public purposes.



GOV. T. B. FERGUSON

273. Removal of Governor Jenkins.—Charges having been preferred against Governor Jenkins, he was removed from office by President Roosevelt, November 30, 1901. Thompson B. Ferguson,* of Blaine county, was immediately appointed as his successor.

274. Statehood to the Front.—Although the bills for the purpose of enabling the people of Oklahoma to form and adopt a constitution and be admitted to the Union as a state had been introduced into every Congress since the Territory was organized, their consideration did not go further than a committee report. After the passage and approval of the Free Homes Bill, Delegate Flynn felt free to concentrate his efforts in an endeavor to secure the passage of a bill providing for the admission of Oklahoma into the Union. He finally succeeded in securing the passage of such a measure by the House of Representatives, during the latter part of the first session of the Fifty-seventh Congress.† Late in No-

*Thompson B. Ferguson was born near Des Moines, Iowa, in 1857. His parents migrated to Southern Kansas while he was a child. He was educated in the public schools and at the Kansas State Normal School (Emporia). He was engaged in educational work for a number of years. When the Cheyenne and Arapaho country was thrown open to settlement in 1892, he settled at Watonga and established the Watonga Republican. In 1897 he was appointed postmaster, and in 1901 was appointed Governor of Oklahoma. Since his retirement from that position he has been engaged in editing and publishing the Watonga Republican. In 1907 he was the Republican nominee for Congress in the second district.

†The measure in question was known as the Omnibus Statehood Bill, as it provided for the admission of Arizona and New Mexico into the Union as separate states at the same time.

vember, 1902, shortly before the beginning of the second session of the Fifty-seventh Congress, the Senate Committee on Territories, headed by its chairman, Senator Albert J. Beveridge, of Indiana, paid a hasty visit to Oklahoma.*

275. The Contest of Single and Separate Statehood.— When Congress convened in December, 1902, there began the greatest legislative battle over the admission of new states that has been witnessed since the days when the admission of free and slave states used to be the all-absorbing topic of consideration. Every Democratic senator from the South and the West supported the Omnibus Bill as it had passed the House of Representatives for the reason that they favored as many new states as possible in the South and West in order that the sectional alignment in the Senate might be more evenly balanced. In addition to this, a number of Republican senators had personal reasons for insisting upon the passage of any bill that would admit Arizona and New Mexico as states. A majority of the Committee on Territories (including its chairman, Senator Beveridge), being opposed to the admission of Arizona and New Mexico at that time, a bill providing for the admission of Oklahoma and the Indian Territory as one state was reported. The supporters of the Omnibus Bill were in the majority but the Committee on Territories refused to report it for action. The majority under the leadership of Senator Quay, of Pennsylvania, threatened to call up the bill without waiting for the report of the Committee. The minority, led by Senator Beveridge, resorted to obstructive tactics. Each side appealed to friends in Oklahoma, who fairly flooded the Senate with telegrams of support or protest as the case might be, all of which were sent to the clerk's desk to be read. Strong delegations from Oklahoma were maintained at Washington by the partizans of both measures. A large convention which met at Claremore, December 3,

*The visit of the Senate Committee was so hasty and its investigations were so brief and superficial that it was quite generally regarded at the time as a matter of form rather than a serious attempt to gather information.

protested against the passage of the Omnibus Bill in its existing form. January 5, 1903, another convention, with nearly three thousand delegates in attendance, met at Oklahoma City and renewed the protest. The battle was a heated one for a time, but in the end, the pressure of other business crowded the Omnibus Bill out of consideration.

276. Organization of the Board of Agriculture.—The Legislative Assembly in the session of 1901, enacted a law providing for the election of a Board of Agriculture by delegates from the county farmers' institutes. The Board was formally organized after the election of six members, December 18, 1902.

BIRD S. McGUIRE

277. Political Campaign of 1902.—Delegate Dennis T. Flynn, having declined to be a candidate for renomination, the Republicans of Oklahoma nominated Bird S. McGuire,* of Pawnee, for delegate to Congress, on a platform favoring immediate statehood for Oklahoma, regardless of the Indian Territory. The Democrats nominated William M. Cross, of Oklahoma City, their platform favoring single statehood for Oklahoma and the Indian Territory combined. The campaign, which was a hotly contested one, resulted in the election of Mr. Mc-

*Bird S. McGuire was born at Belleville, Illinois, in 1864. Most of his early life was spent in Northern Missouri, whither his parents had moved. In 1881 the family moved to Chautauqua county, Kansas. Shortly afterward Bird S. McGuire went to the Indian Territory, where he followed the life of a stockman for three years. Returning to Kansas in 1884, he entered the state normal school at Emporia. After two years in school he began teaching; reading law at the same time. He then attended the law school of the University of Kansas. After his admission to the bar he was elected county attorney of Chautauqua county, a position which he filled for four years. In 1895 he came to Oklahoma, locating at Pawnee. Two years later he was appointed Assistant U. S. District Attorney. In 1902 he was nominated and elected delegate to Congress and was re-elected in 1904. In 1907 he was elected to Congress as representative of the First Oklahoma District.

Guire by a plurality of less than four hundred. The Republicans elected a majority of the members of the upper house of the Territorial Legislative Assembly, and the Democrats secured a majority of the members of the lower house.

278. Statehood Legislation in the Fifty-eighth Congress.—Delegate McGuire introduced a bill embodying statehood for Oklahoma without reference to the Indian Territory. Such a bill was passed by the House of Representatives. In the Senate the bill was so amended as to provide for joint statehood for Oklahoma and the Indian Territory. The House of Representatives refused to concur in the amendment and there the matter ended.

278a. Canadian Valley Flood.—In October, 1904, there occurred a great freshet or flood in the valley of the Canadian River. The flood, which resulted from heavy rains in the vicinity of the headwaters of that stream, in the Rocky Mountains of New Mexico, destroyed or injured practically every bridge in its entire course, railway traffic being blocked for several days.*

278b. Political Campaign of 1904.—Delegate McGuire was renominated by the republicans. The democrats nominated J. Frank Matthews, of Greer county, for delegate to Congress. Mr. McGuire was re-elected. The republicans also elected a majority of both branches of the Legislative Assembly.

278c. The Snyder Storm.—Early in May, 1905, a tornado struck the town of Snyder, in the southern part of Kiowa county, causing great loss of life and destruction of property. The sympathy and generosity of the people of the entire Territory were quickened by the distress of the inhabitants of the unfortunate community and liberal contributions of cash and supplies were received from many sources.

---

*Prof. Charles N. Gould, the geologist of the University of Oklahoma, ascertained by careful investigation that the crest of the flood passed down the Canadian Valley, through Oklahoma, at an average velocity of twenty-four miles per hour.

279. The Sequoyah Constitutional Convention.—The delegates to the convention which was called to frame a constitution for a state to be formed of Indian Territory, were elected and assembled at Muskogee in July, 1905. William H. Murray, of Tishomingo, was elected president of the convention.* The convention, in a session of several weeks' duration, framed a constitution for a state to be composed of the several reservations then constituting the Indian Territory, the same to be called the state of Sequoyah. This instrument was submitted to a vote of the people of the Indian Territory for ratification, but the vote was disappointingly small, very little interest being manifested.

GOV. FRANK FRANTZ

280. Frank Frantz Appointed Governor.—Governor Ferguson's term having expired, President Roosevelt appointed Capt. Frank Frantz,† of Enid, to succeed him, in January, 1906.

---

*Several of the most active and influential members of the Muskogee convention were elected fifteen months later as delegates to the convention which framed the constitution under which the state of Oklahoma was admitted to the Union. Among the leading members was Charles N. Haskell, of Muskogee, who later served as a member of the Oklahoma Constitutional Convention, and was then elected the first governor of the state.

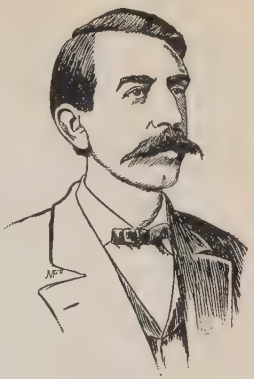
†Frank Frantz was born at Roanoke, Illinois, May 7, 1872. He was educated in the public schools of his native state and spent two years as a student at Eureka College. He settled at Enid, Oklahoma, in September, 1893, at the opening of the Cherokee Strip. At the outbreak of the Spanish-American War he was in Arizona, from which territory he entered the military service as a first lieutenant in the 1st United States Volunteer Cavalry. He was promoted to the rank of captain before the close of the War. In 1901 he was appointed postmaster at Enid. Two years later he was named as U. S. Indian Agent at the Osage agency. He was appointed governor of Oklahoma, his term beginning January 5, 1906, and running until the end of the Territorial regime, November 16, 1907.

281. **Statehood for Oklahoma.**—At the beginning of the first session of the Fifty-ninth Congress, statehood bills were introduced in both Houses of Congress. The House of Representatives passed a bill which was known as the Omnibus Statehood Bill, providing for the admission of two states, namely, one to be composed of the Indian Territory and Oklahoma combined, and the other to be formed by uniting Arizona and New Mexico. The Senate passed a bill which provided for the admission of Oklahoma and the Indian Territory as one state. A compromise was finally effected, by means of which the question of single statehood for Arizona and New Mexico was left to a vote of the citizens of those Territories. Thus amended, the Omnibus Statehood Bill passed both houses and became a law June 14, 1906.

282. **Provisions of the Enabling Act.**—The Enabling Act provided that there should be a constitutional convention of 112 members, of which fifty-five were to be elected by the people of the Indian Territory, fifty-six from the Territory of Oklahoma and one from the Osage Nation. Provision was made for the division of both Territories into districts for the election of delegates to the Constitutional Convention. $5,000,000.00 was appropriated for the permanent school fund of the new state, in addition to the donation of two reserved sections of land in each township for the same purpose. The state was to have five congressmen, the limits of the congressional districts being defined. The manufacture and sale of intoxicating liquors within the limits of that part of the state then included in the Indian Territory and the unopened Indian reservations of Oklahoma Territory was to be prohibited for a period of twenty-one years.

283. **Election of Delegates.**—The election of delegates to the Constitutional Convention was held November 6, 1906. Although local questions entered into the election in a few districts, party lines as a rule were closely drawn. The Democrats secured an overwhelming majority of the members of the Convention, having elected 100 out of a total of 112 of the delegates.

284. The Making of a Constitution.—The Constitutional Convention met at Guthrie, November 20, 1906. William H. Murray was elected president of the Convention. It was in session continuously, with the exception of a brief Christmas recess, until the latter part of April, 1907, when it adjourned subject to the call of President Murray. Re-convening in July, the convention modified some parts of the text of the Constitution already drafted, adopted an ordinance providing for an election to be held September 17, at which state officers were to be chosen at the same time the constitution was to be voted upon.



WM. H. MURRAY

285. The Preliminary Campaign.—Each party held a state convention and put a full state ticket in the field. The Democratic ticket was headed by the name of Charles N. Haskell of Muskogee, for governor. Its platform was a strong endorsement of the constitution and the party made the adoption of that instrument its one great issue. The Republicans nominated Frank Frantz, Territorial governor of Oklahoma, for governor of the state. The Republican platform declared for statehood, while condemning the proposed constitution and, very naturally, did not arouse much enthusiasm. The campaign which followed was distinguished

*William H. Murray was born at Collinsville, Texas, in 1869. His mother died when he was but two years old. At the age of twelve he began making his own way in the world, working on a farm through the summer and attending the public schools in winter. After securing an academic education at College Hill Institute (Springtown, Texas), he spent several years teaching school. He took an active interest in politics at an early age, followed newspaper work for several years, and spent his spare time studying law. He was admitted to the bar in 1897 and, in 1898, settled at Tishomingo, where he practiced law for several years. He then engaged in farming. He has always taken an active interest in politics and public affairs. After the advent of statehood he served as Speaker of the House of Representatives in the first legislative session.

for its earnestness and enthusiasm, several party leaders of national prominence participating. The election resulted in the adoption of the Constitution by an overwhelming majority and a signal victory for the Democrats, who elected their entire state ticket and a large majority of both branches of the State Legislature.

286. **The Constitution Approved.**—President Roosevelt approved the constitution which had been adopted by the people of Oklahoma and set Saturday, November 16, 1907, as the day for the inauguration of the state government, thus ending the long probationary period of the new commonwealth.

287. **The Constitution.**—The constitution of Oklahoma is longer than that of any other state in the Union, covering ninety-five pages and consisting of about 45,000 words. It takes more advanced ground and goes more into detail than does any other state constitution. Article IX deals with corporations in general and the establishment of a state corporation commission in particular. This commission is in effect the supreme controlling power over transportation and transmission companies. A noteworthy provision of the Oklahoma constitution is that the powers of the initiative and referendum* are reserved to the people of the state at large with reference to any matter, legislative or constitutional, affecting the interests of the state; and to the people of municipalities relating to any matter affecting the interest of the city, either with reference to charters or ordinances. Another provision not generally contained in constitutions is that relating to the regulation of hours of labor on public work and in mines, and relating to child labor. Oklahoma is the only state, which, in its constitution, provides that the defense of contributory negligence shall be a question of fact and in all cases left to the jury. Foreign insurance companies are required to pay two per cent of all premiums

*By Initiative and Referendum is meant the power in the people to initiate legislation or to have proposed laws referred back to them for their approval.

collected within the state as a tax. Constitutionally speaking, Indians are, "white persons" in Oklahoma. The Oklahoma constitution has attracted the attention of the entire country and opinions concerning it differ widely. That it is what people desired is witnessed by the tremendous majority it received at the polls. It is an earnest effort on the part of its makers to solve great problems, and the entire country will watch its workings with deep interest.

288. **Prohibition.**—Besides accepting the conditions with reference to the prohibition of the liquor traffic in the Indian reservations, imposed by the Enabling Act, the Constitutional Convention also submitted the question of state-wide prohibition as a separate constitutional proposition to be voted upon at the same time as the constitution. This separate clause was adopted by a majority of over 18,000 votes and the prohibition law went into effect the day that the state government was inaugurated.

Summary.—Thus ends the story of the making of a powerful commonwealth in eighteen years. It is a commonwealth blessed with great resources, both in the quality of its soil and climate and of its citizenship. It starts on its career already occupying a place in the front rank of the procession of states. Its history is unique and distinctive. Here the Red Man, former owner of all these broad prairies, will no doubt make his greatest advancement in the arts of civilization and government. Here, untrammeled by precedents of former generations, men may work out the best that is to be had in government and society. The position that Oklahoma is to occupy among the galaxy of states must depend in its last analysis upon the quality of its citizenship. It is hoped that the student who has followed this romantic story has become imbued with such a pride that his entire life may be spent in helping to develop this state into all that it promises to be at its admission to the Union.

Questions Concerning the Eighth Period

1. What was the Organic Act? When was it passed? Tell about the organization of the Territory of Oklahoma. Who was the first governor of Oklahoma?

2. How many counties did Oklahoma have when it was first organized? How many members did each branch of the Territorial Legislative Assembly have? Where was the temporary capital of Oklahoma established? Tell about the fight for the removal of the capital.

3. Who was the first delegate to Congress from Oklahoma? Who was the second governor of the Territory? What is the difference between a delegate from a territory and a congressman from a state?

4. What Indian reservations were opened to settlement in September, 1891? In April, 1892? When was the Cherokee Strip opened to settlement?

5. Who was the third governor of Oklahoma Territory? Who was the second delegate to Congress from Oklahoma?

6. What was the "Ghost Dance" excitement? When did it occur? What Indian proved to be helpful to both races during that excitement?

7. Tell about the struggles of the early settlers to get established. In what way did the railway companies aid the settlers?

8. When did the agitation for statehood first begin? What was the difference between "single statehood" and "double statehood"? Tell about the struggle for statehood.

9. When was the Kickapoo reservation opened to settlement? When were the Kiowa-Comanche and Wichita-Caddo reservations thrown open to settlement? In what particular did the method of opening the last reservations differ from previous land openings?

10. Tell about the leasing of the school lands. What was the Free Homes Bill? When did it finally pass Congress and become a law? What did it mean to the people of Oklahoma?

11. What was the Dawes Commission? What was the Curtis Bill and when was it passed? When did the Government assume control of the schools of the Indian Territory?

12. When did the era of rapid development in railway construction in the two Territories begin? When were the first discoveries of oil and gas made in the Indian Territory? What effect did these discoveries have on the growth and development of the Territories?

13. Name the governors of Oklahoma Territory which have not already been mentioned. Name the delegates to Congress which have not already been mentioned.

14. What was the Enabling Act? When did it become a law? When and where did the Constitutional Convention assemble? When was the constitution adopted by vote of the people? When was it approved by President Roosevelt? When did statehood become an accomplished fact?

GOVERNOR CHARLES N. HASKELL

NINTH PERIOD
(1907)

CHAPTER XVI

Oklahoma Under State Government

289.

STATEHOOD Ushered In.—When the day appointed for the inauguration of the state government arrived, a great concourse of people gathered at Guthrie from all parts of the state. Governor Charles N. Haskell* delivered his inaugural address and all of the state officers were sworn in and, amid general rejoicing, the two territories were reunited as a single state of the American Union.

290. **The First Congressional Delegation.**—Five members

*Charles N. Haskell was born in Ohio in December, 1861. Left an orphan, he was thrown upon his own resources at a very early age. His boyhood years were spent in hard work on the farm during the greater part of the year, with limited schooling during the winter seasons. At the age of sixteen he began to teach school, an occupation which he followed for a number of years. While teaching he took up the study of law. After his admission to the bar he began the practice of law at Ottawa, Ohio. He took an active interest in politics from the time that he attained his majority, and was affiliated with the Democratic party. In addition to his legal business he became interested in railway construction. After having been the unsuccessful nominee of his party for governor of Ohio, he moved west, locating at Muskogee, in 1900. In his new home his capacity for leadership in the material development of a rapidly growing town soon attracted notice. He first became prominent politically in the new state when he took the lead in shaping the work of the Sequoyah Constitutional Convention in the summer of 1905. In 1906 he was elected a delegate to the Oklahoma Constitutional Convention, of which body he became the recognized leader. His subsequent nomination and election as the first governor of the new state gave him a very prominent place in its history.

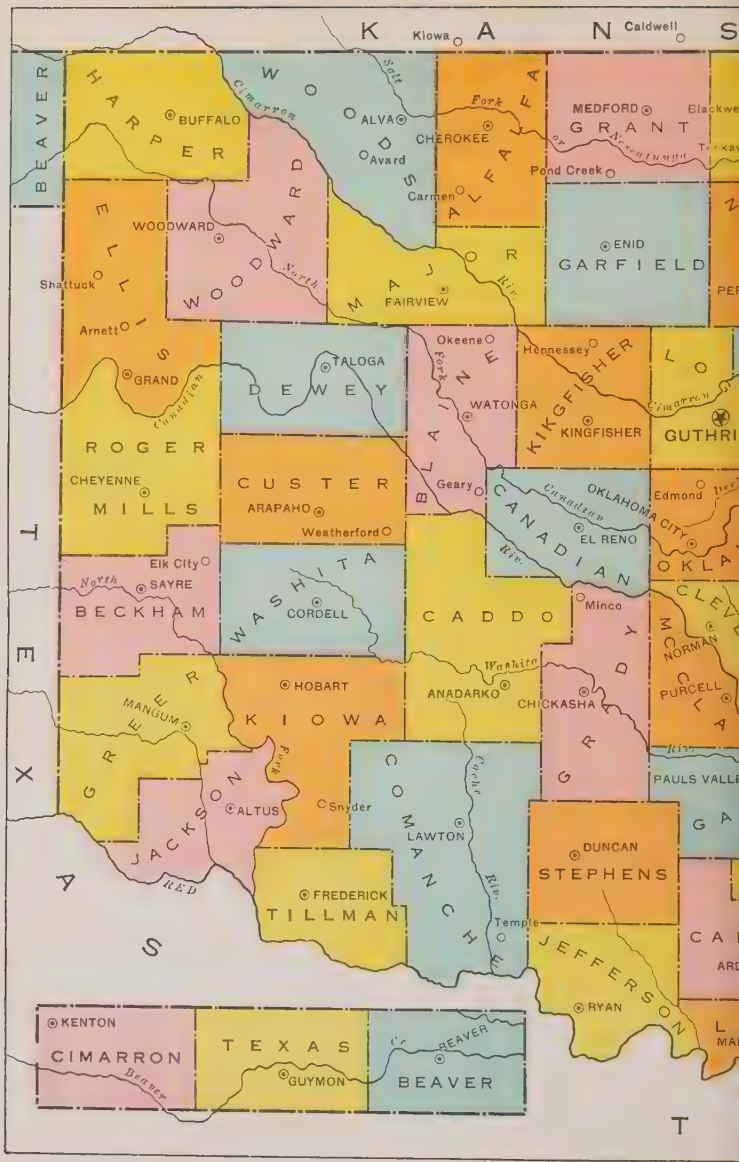
of Congress were elected at the time of the adoption of the constitution, namely: First District, Bird S. McGuire (republican), Pawnee; Second District, Elmer L. Fulton (democrat), Oklahoma City; Third District, James S. Davenport (democrat), Vinita; Fourth District, Charles D. Carter (democrat), Ardmore; Fifth District, Scott Ferris (democrat), Lawton.

291. **The First Legislature.**—The first Legislature of the new state assembled at Guthrie two weeks after the inauguration of the state officers. William H. Murray, of Johnston county, was elected speaker of the House of Representatives.

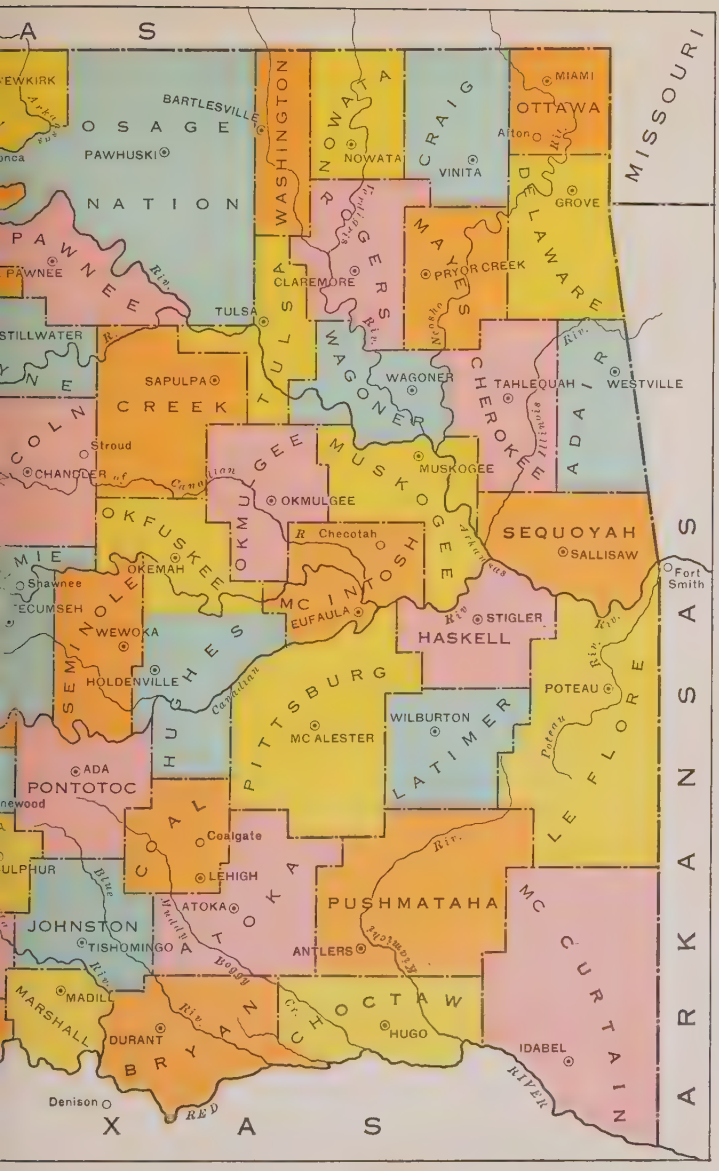
292. **Election of United States Senators.**—One of the first and most important duties of the legislature was the choosing of the first United States senators from the new state. Robert L. Owen, of Muskogee, and Thomas P. Gore, of Lawton, who had been nominated by the Democratic state primary, were elected.*

293. **The Work of the Legislature.**—The work of the First Legislature was necessarily extensive as its task included the revision of all of the Territorial statutes and the adaptation of the same to new and changed conditions. The session extended over a period of five months. Among the more notable laws enacted were the guaranty bank deposit law and the compulsory primary election law. Provision was also made for the establishment of additional normal schools and of secondary schools of agriculture. The Board of Agriculture was re-organized by an act in conformity with a provision of the Constitution, and its scope was extended to include the work hitherto performed by the Board of Regents of the Agricultural and Mechanical College and those of the Live Stock Sanitary Commission. A uniform system of school text books was also provided for by law.

*When the new Oklahoma senators entered the Senate, Senator Owen drew the lot which entitled him to a seat for the term ending March 3, 1913. Senator Gore's term was decided by the same means to be the one ending March 3, 1909.


K A N S A S
Kiowa
Caldwell
BEAVER
HARPER
BUFFALO
WOODS
ALVA
Avard
CHEROKEE
ALFALFA
MEDFORD
GRANT
Pond Creek
Carmen
WOODWARD
ELLIS
Shattuck
Arnett
MAJOR
FAIRVIEW
ENID
GARFIELD
GRAND
TALOGA
DEWEY
Okeene
WATONGA
BLAINE
Hennessey
KINGFISHER
GUTHRIE
ROGER
MILLS
CHEYENNE
CUSTER
ARAPAHO
Weatherford
Geary
CANADIAN
OKLAHOMA CITY
Edmond
EL RENO
Elk City
SAYRE
BECKHAM
WASHITA
CORDELL
CADDO
Minco
ANADARKO
CHICKASHA
GRADY
NORMAN
PURCELL
HOBART
KIOWA
MANGUM
GREER
JACKSON
ALTUS
Snyder
COMANCHE
LAWTON
PAULS VALLEY
DUNCAN
STEPHENS
FREDERICK
TILLMAN
Temple
JEFFERSON
RYAN
KENTON
CIMARRON
TEXAS
GUYMON
BEAVER
T

Okla


OSAGE
NATION
PAWNEE
WASHINGTON
NOWATA
CRAIG
OTTAWA
MIAMI
MISSOURI
BARTLESVILLE
PAWHUSKA
NOWATA
VINITA
GROVE
DELAWARE
ROGERS
MAYES
PRYOR CREEK
CLAREMORE
TULSA
WAGONER
CHEROKEE
ADAIR
WESTVILLE
TAHLEQUAH
SAPULPA
CREEK
MUSKOGEE
OKMULGEE
SEQUOYAH
SALLISAW
Fort Smith
OKFUSKEE
OKEMAH
Shawnee
SEMINOLE
MC INTOSH
EUFAULA
STIGLER
HASKELL
WEWOKA
HOLDENVILLE
HUGHES
PITTSBURG
POTEAU
LE FLORE
WILBURTON
MC ALESTER
LATIMER
ADA
PONTOTOC
COAL
Coalgate
LEHIGH
ATOKA
JOHNSTON
TISHOMINGO
PUSHMATAHA
ANTLERS
MC CURTAIN
IDABEL
MARSHALL
MADILL
DURANT
CHOCTAW
HUGO
Denison
RED
RIVER
TEXAS
ARKANSAS

1907

APPENDIX

APPENDIX

THE INDIANS OF OKLAHOMA

The American Indian.

There has been much speculation as to the origin of the so-called American Indian race, and many have been the theories advanced. Who the first Indians were? whence they came? their possible descent from their predecessors, the so-called mound builders and cliff dwellers,—these and other like questions must remain unanswered—and theories are only theories at best. The possibility of communication and migration between continents across Behring Strait, the wrecked junks of Japanese and Malay mariners on the western coast of America, together with the apparent traces of Mongolian or Malay racial traits among certain Indians, all tend to justify the speculation as to the presence of such strains of blood in the composition of the American race. With all that, the American Indian is neither Mongolian nor Malay. The sharp featured face, not uncommon in some tribes, might as easily evidence descent from some branches of the Caucasian. Suffice it to say that, unlike his prototypes, the lake dwellers and the cave men of the old world, he has been spared to witness the dawning of an historic period. Indeed, he survives to form a constituent part of an enlightened and civilized community.

Although the question of the origin of the Indian may never be settled, the division of the race into groups or linguistic families by the affinities of speech, has been scientifically determined as the result of the careful study and comparison. Just as the great Aryan stock are divided into the Celtic, Teutonic, Slavic and Greco-Romanic sub-races, so the various tribes and nations of the American Indian race are grouped into linguistic families, such as the Algonquian, Athapascan, Caddoan, Iroquoian, Kiowan, Muskhogean, Shoshonean, Siouan, etc. The tribal wars and the propensity for wandering caused some of the tribes of kindred stock

and speech to be widely scattered without destroying the real evidence of kinship and common origin. In many cases the tribal traditions, manners, customs and ceremonies of the tribes of a given linquistic family were nearly identical. In numerous instances the tribes of such a group or family were friendly and not infrequently they joined in offensive and defensive alliance, but instances wherein the most deadly emnity existed between the tribes of kindred blood and speech were not uncommon.

The Algonquian Tribes.

Arapaho.—Probably from the Pawnee word "tirapahu," meaning "trader." The Arapaho call themselves "inunaina," meaning "our people." They are a western tribe of the Algonquian group, long resident on the Great Plains.

The traditions of the Arapaho are to the effect that in former times their tribe lived far to the northeast, where they tilled the soil and had settled homes, probably in the Upper Mississippi Valley or the Lake Superior region. They seem to have been permanently allied with the Cheyenne as far back as the traditional period. The Basawunena, a small hostile tribe, was conquered and incorporated into the Arapaho tribe. After crossing the Red River of the North and entering the Great Plains in Dakota, one branch of the Arapaho, the Astina, left the parent stem and drifted up the Missouri, where they joined the Assiniboine. This tribe, now known as Grosventre, is located on the Fort Belknap reservation in Montana. The main tribe continued to drift westward and southward, always in company with the Cheyenne, across the Missouri, to the Black Hills; thence to the Platte. Though this migration may have been in part voluntary, the fact that the numerous Dakota were always behind them leads to the inference that it was not altogether a matter of choice.

About 1835 a part of the Arapaho as well as a part of the Cheyenne separated, when the main bodies of the two tribes moved south from the Platte River. From that time on both tribes have been permanently divided into northern and southern bands. The Southern Arapaho have been located in Oklahoma for nearly forty years past, while the Northern Arapaho are located on the Wind River reservation in Wyoming. The Northern Arapaho are considered the nucleus or main stem of the nation, as they have retained all of the sacred ceremonial paraphernalia of the tribe. Since 1840 the Arapaho have been at peace with all of the other

tribes of the Plains. Although a brave people by nature, they have been more inclined to peace than the tribe with which they have been associated. They were the first of the wild tribes to recognize the binding force of the Treaty of Medicine Lodge (1867), and refused to join the Cheyenne, Kiowa and Comanche in the uprising of 1874. In 1892 the Arapaho accepted allotments, after which the surplus lands of the Cheyenne and Arapaho reservation were thrown open to settlement. Their tribal history has much in common with that of the Cheyenne. In recent years the Arapaho have been making steady progress in the ways of civilization.

Cahokia.—An Algonquian tribe of the Illinois Confederacy. The Cahokia were a roving people, most closely allied with a kindred tribe called the Tamaroa. Under the influence of the Jesuit missionaries there were induced to form a permanent settlement in the vicinity of the present town of Cahokia, Illinois. Through various influences the Cahokia rapidly decreased in numbers, and finally, about the beginning of the last century, it was consolidated with the remnants of the other tribes of the Illinois Confederacy, which, collectively have since been designated as the Peoria. The Peoria now live in Ottawa county, Oklahoma.

Cheyenne.—French form of the Dakota term "Shai-ena," meaning "people of alien speech." The Cheyenne called themselves "Dzi-tsi-istas," meaning "our people." They are a western branch of the widely diffused Algonquian stock.

The Cheyenne first came to the notice of the white man when they sent a deputation to LaSalle's fort on the Illinois River in 1680 from their home country, which was then on the headwaters of the Mississippi, to ask the French to come to their country to trade. Afterwards they moved to the valley of the Red River of the North. Still later they moved to the valley of the Cheyenne River, in North Dakota, which is tributary to the Red River. Up to that time and perhaps later, the Cheyenne were not much given to roving, but, on the contrary preferred to live in fixed villages and cultivate the soil. Over a century ago they crossed the Missouri, being pressed by the Dakota. Here they were opposed by a hostile tribe of closely related Algonquian stock called the Sutaio. The Cheyenne and the Sutaio were at war for a time, but peace, ending in an alliance, followed. Ultimately the Sutaio were absorbed by the Cheyenne, thus losing their identity as a tribe. Lewis and Clark reported the Cheyenne as living in the vicinity of the Black Hills in 1804. From thence they drifted on west and south.

The Cheyenne entered into their first treaty with the Government in 1825. Shortly afterward they moved to the valley of the Platte River. In 1832 a large part of the tribe was induced by a fur company to move to the Arkansas Valley in Eastern Colorado. The remainder of the tribe continued to live in Wyoming, thus making a division of the tribe into Northern and Southern Cheyenne. This division was formally agreed to as a matter of permanent policy by the treaty of Fort Laramie in 1851. The coming of the Cheyenne and Arapaho to the Arkansas brought them into conflict with the Kiowa and Comanche, which tribes ranged southward from that stream. At least two pitched battles were fought between the contending tribes in Western Oklahoma in 1837 and 1838. A year or two later peace was declared between the tribes as it had been between the Cheyenne and the Arapaho on the one side, and the Dakota on the other, some time before. Henceforth the Cheyenne and Arapaho were at peace with all of the other tribes of the Great Plains.

The discovery of gold in the Rocky Mountains of Colorado in 1858-9 brought a large influx of immigrants across the Plains. This condition soon disturbed the peaceful equilibrium which had long been maintained between the fur traders and the Indians. With thousands of fortune hunters in the country, most of them unacquainted with the Indian and his ways, collision and conflict were perhaps only to be expected. The result was a war between the Cheyenne and the whites which lasted, with several interruptions, for nearly fifteen years. The brutal excesses of savage warfare in that long conflict were not confined to the acts of the uncivilized Cheyenne. The notorious Sand Creek massacre, wherein non-combatants were slaughtered without regard to age or sex, forms one of the blackest chapters ever written in the military annals of a civilized nation, yet the troops in that action were under the command of a man whose chosen life work was that of preaching the Gospel of the Prince of Peace!* The Solomon Valley raid in Northern Kansas, the battle on the Washita, and a hundred other scenes of violence and carnage followed as a logical sequence. Peace was ordained in treaty after treaty, but peace did not come till cordons of military posts, the building of railways and the consequent extermination of the vast herds of buffalo on the Great Plains forced the Cheyenne to stay on the reservation apportioned to his people by the treaty of Medicine Lodge. Under such circumstances it is not strange that the Cheyenne were

*The war with the Cheyenne Indians which followed the Chivington massacre is said to have entailed an expenditure of over $30,000,000 by the Government in addition to the sacrifice of over a thousand soldiers, settlers, freighters and scouts.

slow to turn into the "White Man's Road." Indeed, it is only in recent years that they have come to know that not all white men are their enemies.

The tedious years which followed their retirement to the reservation were not wanting in longings to return to the wild life, free from irksome restrictions and agency rules. In the summer of 1885 many of the Cheyenne became dissatisfied and threatened to go on the war path. Only the ardent persuasion of the more prudent tribesmen and a heavy display of military force by the Government prevented an outbreak. In 1890 the "Ghost Dance" again worked some of them up to a state of excitement, but with no apparent danger of an outbreak. In 1891 the Cheyenne had lands allotted in severalty and shortly afterwards the surplus lands were opened to settlement. The Cheyenne of today is a man of peace, who has the respect and confidence of his white neighbors. A type of the Indian of the Great Plains, his progress in the White Man's Way may seem slow, but it is not unworthy of the people of a race who have had to reverse all the customs, habits, ideals and traditions of ages in the short space of a single generation.

Delaware.—So named from the Delaware River in the valley of which the tribe formerly lived. A tribe or confederacy of Algonquian stock, originally occupying Eastern Pennsylvania, nearly all of New Jersey and the valley of the lower Hudson. They called themselves "lenape" or "leni-lenape," the meaning of which was "real men."

The Delaware Indians were generally regarded as the ranking member of the Algonquian family and supposedly the main stem from which many, if not most of the other Algonquian tribes were off-shoots. For this reason they were accorded the respectful title of "grandfather" by the other Algonquian tribes, many of which not only claimed close connection, but preserved traditions of common origin. There were a number of Algonquian tribes which were closely related to the Delaware, most of the surviving members of which were ultimately adopted into the Delaware. These included the Mahican, the Munsee and the Wappinger from the Hudson Valley, and the Conoy and the Nanticoke from the Susquehanna. It was the Manhattan band of the Wappinger which attacked Hendrick Hudson in 1609 and which, in 1626 sold Manhattan Island to the Dutch for trinkets worth only sixty gilders.

The Delaware entered into a treaty with William Penn at Philadelphia in 1682, which they always respected. During the latter half of the seventeenth century and the first half of the eighteenth, the Delaware acknowledged the supremacy of the Iroquois Confed-

eracy, which assumed even the privilege of selling the lands of the Delaware at pleasure. This continued until the time of the French and Indian war, after which the Delaware asserted their independence. The Delaware moved to the valley of the Susquehanna in 1742. From thence they soon began to drift to the Allegheny and lower down on the Ohio. There the Delaware came in contact with the French, the influence and support of whom doubtless had much to do with freeing them from the galling dominion of the Iroquois. The Delaware assisted the French in the French and Indian War, helped to harass the western frontier of the Colonies during the Revolutionary War and otherwise resisted the encroachment of white settlement until the treaty of Greenville in 1795.

About 1770 the Delaware had secured the consent of the Miami and the Piankeshaw to occupy the lands east of the Wabash, in Indiana. In 1789 a part of the tribe secured permission from the Spanish Governor of Louisiana to locate in Missouri. From there they moved to Arkansas and eventually to Texas. By 1835 most of the tribe had been re-united on a new reservation in Kansas, where they continued to live until 1867, when they moved to the Indian Territory and merged with the Cherokee. A small band of the Delaware has long been affiliated with the Wichita-Caddo-Keechi tribes. Others are living in Canada, while still others known as the Stockbridges, are living in Wisconsin. The Delaware were long subject to the missionary effort of the Moravians. The story of the Christianized (or Moravian) Delaware is an interesting and pathetic one.

The Delaware is often taken as a type of the whole race. Originally the owners of the sites of more than one of our greatest cities, the Delaware always moved before the advance of the whites with a merely nominal recompense for the lands which they unwillingly abandoned. Although during a period of forty years (1755 to 1795) the Delaware were frequently at war with the whites, the rest of their two and one quarter centuries' intercourse with the white man being a story not only of peace and patience, but also of uncomplaining sacrifice and unselfish service as well. In the early history of the trans-Mississippi region it would be difficult to enumerate the expeditions, the success and safety of which depended largely, if not entirely, upon the knowledge and resourcefulness of Delaware guides. As a people they lacked the ability to drive good bargains with the Government in the sale of lands, and so they are poor in purse as compared with some of the other tribes. But it has ever been manhood rather than money, deeds rather than dollars with the Delaware, and if the

deeds and traditions of an heroic past count for aught, they are a rich people. They have probably left more names on the geography of the United States than any other tribe. They have lived in ten different states in the American Union, and have blazed the path for the exploration of as many more. It is perhaps true that no single tribe has had so much to do with the march of civilization across the continent.*

Kaskaskia.—An Algonquian tribe of the Illinois Confederacy.

The Kaskaskia were at one time a leading member of the federated Illinois tribes. They were visited by Marquette in 1673-4, who established a mission station among them. The Kaskaskia then lived in Central Illinois. Later on, about the beginning of the eighteenth century, they moved to the bank of the Mississippi, locating near the site of the present town of Kaskaskia, Illinois. In common with the other Illinois tribes, the Kaskaskia rapidly decreased in numbers. They were parties to several treaties with the United States, becoming beneficiaries of the patronage and protection of the Government by the treaty of Vincennes, August 23, 1803. By a treaty entered into at Castor Hill, Missouri, October 27, 1832, the Kaskaskia ceded to the United States all of their lands east of the Mississippi, the various remnants of the old Illinois Confederacy being consolidated into a single tribe, which was given a new reservation in Kansas. By the treaty of Washington, February 23, 1867, the lands of the last mentioned reservation having been ceded to the Government also, a new reservation, located in the northeast corner of Oklahoma, was assigned to the federated remnants of the Illinois tribes, and there their surviving descendants still live.

Kickapoo.—From "kiwigapaw," meaning "he stands about," a tribe of the Algonquian stock, ethnically closely allied to the Sac and Fox.

The Kickapoo seems first to have been met by French explorers in Southern Wisconsin about 1670, ranging thence over into Northern Illinois. Later, after the practical extermination of the Illinois Confederacy, the Kickapoo moved southward to Central Illinois and eastward to the Wabash. The Kickapoo took an active

*An ancient wampum belt, which has been in the possession of the Deleware long before the coming of the white man to the shores of America, was used at the treaty with William Penn. Later it was seen and acknowledged by British colonial officials and by George Washington, President of the United States. This historic relic was adorned with a copper heart which, like that of the Deleware, never changed. It is said to be in the possession of that part of the Deleware tribe which settled among the Wichita and Caddo, on the Washita.

The Deleware furnished 170 soldiers to the Union Army out of a total able-bodied male population of 201.

part in the war against the United States by the tribes which united under Tecumseh, (1811-13) and, twenty years later many of them rallied to the support of Black Hawk in his uprising. In 1809 the Kickapoo ceded their lands on the Wabash to the Government and, by another treaty, made in 1819, they relinquished all claim to Central Illinois. Some years later the Kickapoo moved to Missouri and thence to a reservation in Kansas. There a large party left the main body of the tribe, about 1853, and went to Texas and ultimately to Mexico, where they became known as the Mexican Kickapoo. Ten years later these were joined by another party which had become dissatisfied. The Mexican Kickapoo were the cause of considerable trouble on the frontier between the two countries, and repeated efforts were made to induce them to return. In 1873 a part of them came back and settled on a reservation in the Indian Territory. The rest, constituting nearly half of the tribe, settled on a reservation in Northern Mexico.

The lands of the Oklahoma Kickapoo were allotted in severalty, the surplus lands being thrown open to white settlement in 1895. Since that time most of the Oklahoma Kickapoo have moved to Mexico and rejoined their kindred. The sale of Kickapoo allotted lands in Oklahoma has been the source of considerable scandal, owing to alleged fraud. The Kickapoo have been regarded as one of the least progressive tribes, being tenaciously attached to the traditions and customs of their fathers.

Miami.—An Algonquian tribe, closely related to the Illinois tribes. When first met by the French about 1660, the Miami were living in Southeastern Wisconsin. Thirty years later they moved southward, establishing themselves around the head of Lake Michigan in Illinois, Indiana and Michigan. Still later they overran the valleys of the Wabash, the Maumee (Miami of the Lakes) and the Miami in Ohio.

The Miami do not seem to have been as constant in their alliances and devotions as were many of the neighboring tribes, being favorable alternately to the interests of the French and English. During the French and Indian War they sided with the French. Later, they joined Pontiac in his war against English expansion. During the American Revolution they sided with Great Britain against the Americans, and after the close of that war, continued to be hostile to the United States until they met with a decisive defeat by the forces under General Wayne in 1794. The celebrated war chief, Little Turtle, who led the Indians in the campaign which had resulted in the previous defeat of Generals St. Clair and Harmar, was a Miami, who ranked among the greatest Indian leaders in American history.

In 1811 the Miami joined the movement of Tecumseh and were allied with the British during the war which followed. They then began to dispose of their lands in Indiana. In 1839 they agreed to accept a reservation in Kansas. To this reservation eight hundred of the Miami moved in 1846, a smaller band remaining on a reservation in Wabash County, Indiana. In Kansas, the Miami continued to decrease in number, until finally one hundred and fifty survivors sold their lands in 1873, and moved to a small reservation near that of their kinsmen of the federated Wea, Piankeshaw and Peoria, where the remnant of the tribe still lives, numbering less than one hundred persons all told. The Miami in Indiana now number about two hundred and fifty, nearly all of mixed white blood.

Ottawa.—(Origin of name unknown.) An important tribe of the Algonquian linguistic family. Ethnically the Ottawa are the most closely related to the Chippewa and the Pottawatomie.

The first French explorers found the Ottawa living in the region around the foot of Lake Michigan. They were soon won to alliance with the French. The Ottawa were also on friendly terms with the Huron, thereby incurring the enmity of the Iroquois Five Nations, of New York. They were hostile to the English during the French and Indian War, and Pontiac, who was a chief of the Detroit Ottawa, refusing to accept the peace which was proclaimed at the close of that war, organized a confederation of Indian tribes to make war on the English. Not all of the Ottawa joined Pontiac's movement, however, and it eventually ended in failure.

During the Revolutionary War the Ottawa aided the British, and they continued their hostile attitude toward the Americans with but slight interruptions until the treaty of Greenville in 1795. In the war of 1812 they again supported the British .

During the century after the coming of the first French explorers, the Ottawa scattered, many settling in Canada, others in Michigan, and a few as far south as Ohio. In 1836 this last mentioned band sold its lands on the Maumee and moved to a new reservation on the Marais des Cygnes in Kansas. From there they moved to a reservation in Northeastern Oklahoma in 1870. The Ottawa tribe numbers several thousand people, all of whom are civilized and self-supporting. Only a small portion of the tribe lives in Oklahoma, the rest being widely scattered in Michigan, Wisconsin and Canada.

Peoria.—One of the five principal tribes of the Illinois Confederacy. They occupied a district in Central Illinois, along the Illinois River and about Peoria Lake. In common with the allied

tribes they suffered from the hostility of the Iroquois during the latter half of the seventeenth century, and after Pontiac's war, from that of the tribes from the region of Lakes Michigan and Huron, also. Early in the nineteenth century the Peoria were consolidated with the Kaskaskia and Cahokia into one tribe or band. In 1832 this band moved to Kansas, where its numbers still continued to decrease. While living in Kansas they were consolidated with the Wea and Piankeshaw. In 1867, the lands of this reservation having been sold, the Peoria moved to a new reservation adjoining that of the Quapaw in the Indian Territory. The total number of Indians of the composite tribe, nearly all of mixed white blood, is now less than two hundred.

Pottawatomie.—From "potewatmik," meaning "fire-makers," in allusion to their traditional custom of making a separate council fire for themselves.

The Pottawatomie were a prominent tribe of the Algonquian family, most closely related to the Chippewa and Ottawa. The first French explorers found them settled about the mouth of Green Bay, on the western shore of Lake Michigan. Shortly afterward they began moving southward, settling at Chicago and on the St. Joseph River in Michigan. After the conquest of the Illinois country they took possession of a large part of it.

During the French and Indian War and Pontiac's War, they were opposed to the English. During the War of Independence they supported the cause of the mother country against the colonies and remained hostile to the Americans until after the victory of Wayne and the treaty of Greenville in 1795. Shortly afterward they moved down on the Wabash, against the protests of the Miami, who claimed the whole region. During the War of 1812 they joined the confederacy of tribes under Tecumseh, and again sided with the British against the Americans and joined in the general treaty of peace at the conclusion of that struggle in 1815. Part of the Pottawatomie moved to Kansas in 1837. Others refused to move and were finally driven out by a military force, part of them fleeing to Canada. Part of those who went West settled in Iowa for a time, but eventually, in 1846, joined their kindred in Kansas. There the tribe was divided some years later, one part known as the Prairie band accepting a small reservation, and the others taking allotments of land in severalty. Most of the latter, known as the Citizen Pottawatomie, afterwards sold their lands and, in 1868, moved to the Indian Territory, where they were settled on a reservation with the Absentee Shawnee.

As a people, the Pottawatomie have been very progressive.

Their lands in Oklahoma were allotted in severalty in 1891, the surplus being thrown open to settlement. There are about fifteen hundred Pottawatomie in Oklahoma, and there are perhaps a thousand living elsewhere, half of which are in Kansas and the rest in Michigan, Wisconsin and Canada.

Sauk and Fox.—Sauk from "Osaukie," their own name of uncertain meaning. Fox, from an allusion to their fox-totem. The Fox called themselves Muskuaki, meaning "of red earth."

The Sauk and Fox were originally two independent though closely related tribes of Algonquian stock. Their ancient domains were in Northern Wisconsin and the upper peninsula of Michigan. Late in the seventeenth century they were driven southward by the Iroquois, and again by the French and the Chippewa, locating in Northwestern Illinois and in Iowa. About 1760 the two tribes united and have ever since been practically one tribe.

The Sauk and Fox joined the British in the War of Independence and also in the second war between Great Britain and the United States. In 1832 that portion of the two tribes which was opposed to the treaty by which they were to relinquish all of their lands east of the Mississippi, went on the war-path under the leadership of Black Hawk, but were soon overpowered. In 1841 about three-fourths of the Sauk and Fox accepted a reservation on the Marais des Cygnes River in Kansas, to which they moved several years later, the rest of the two tribes remaining in Iowa. In 1868 the Sauk and Fox in Kansas disposed of their lands, receiving in exchange a tract in Oklahoma between the North Canadian and the Cimarron and just west of the Creek Nation.

As a tribe the Sauk and Fox have been very conservative, though there have been some notable exceptions. In 1891 their lands were allotted in severalty and the surplus was then thrown open to white settlement.

Shawnee, or Shawano.—Frow "shawan," meaning "south" or "southern," or "sewan," meaning "salty."

An important branch of the Algonquian linguistic family. In ancient times they made salt at the salt springs of Southwestern Virginia and traded it to the Indians of other tribes. The Shawnee have been great wanderers. The white colonists first found them in Carolina and Georgia, and some of them had been living as far south as the Gulf Coast. The name of Suwanee River was taken from that of this tribe. Even while living in the south, the Shawnee seem to have kept up a friendly intercourse with their kindred of other Algonquian tribes, particularly the Delaware and the Miami. In 1694 the main body of the Shawnee moved north and set-

tled in the valley of the Upper Delaware. Another branch of the tribe, about 1650 had settled in the valley of the Cumberland. These moved again about 1715 to the Ohio country, where, forty years later, they were reunited with the rest of the tribe, when it moved westward from the valleys of the Delaware and Susquehanna.

The Shawnee were hostile to the English colonies during the French and Indian War and Pontiac's War which followed. They sided with the British against the Americans during the War for Independence. They remained hostile until the treaty of Greenville, in 1795. They took to the war-path again under the leadership of their great chieftain, Tecumseh, in 1811, and remained hostile to the Americans until 1815.

One band of the Shawnee moved west of the Mississippi and settled in Missouri in 1793. These were joined by part of the main body of the tribe when they moved to a new reservation in Kansas in 1825. Another band, declining to go to Kansas, went to Texas in 1837, settling on the Sabine River. Ever since that period this band has been known as the Absentee Shawnee. A small body of the Shawnee had become affiliated with a part of the Seneca of Sandusky before leaving Ohio. That part of the tribe which moved to Kansas became known as the Black Bob Shawnee, taking the name from that of their principal chief. In 1854 the Black Bob band agreed to accept allotments and sell the surplus lands of their 1,600,000-acre reservation,without the knowledge or consent of their kindred, the Absentee Shawnee, who were joint owners of the same. The latter were then notified to return within five years if they desired to share in the distribution of the lands and the proceeds of the sale of the surplus. None of them availed themselves of the privilege, however, and their interest expired by default. Meanwhile, the Absentee Shawnee drifted northward and located in the Creek country of the Indian Territory. There they lived independent of the bounties of the Government. They had comfortable homes, large herds of cattle and horses, cultivated extensive fields in farm crops, owned some slaves and were in a prosperous condition at the outbreak of the Civil War. They did not understand the conflict between the whites of the two sections and at first they were disposed to remain neutral. Finding this an impossibility, they fled northward to Kansas, abandoning most of the accumulations of their years of industry and frugality. During the War they lived in the valley of the Walnut River, in Southern Kansas. A number of the Absentee Shawnee served in the Federal Army. Scattered, discouraged and homeless, many of them died

of exposure and privation during and immediately after the War. In 1866 they were assigned to a reservation just west of the Seminole Nation, embracing the greater part of what is now Pottawatomie county, together with parts of Cleveland and Oklahoma counties. There they were joined two or three years later by the Citizen Pottawatomie from Kansas. They received allotments of land in 1891 and the surplus lands was thrown open to settlement. A part of the Absentee Shawnee, under the leadership of a chief called Big Jim, (a grandson of the great war chief, Tecumseh), refused to select allotments, and their allotments were selected arbitrarily by the allotting commission. Ten years later Big Jim died in Mexico where he was seeking to arrange for the migration of part of his people. For more than seventy years the Absentee Shawnee have been self-supporting and have lived without the support or aid of government patrimony.

The Black Bob Shawnee did not prosper after the white men began to crowd them in Kansas. Several years after the close of the Civil War they entered into an agreement by the terms of which they were permitted to sell their lands in Kansas. They then moved to the Indian Territory, where they settled among the Cherokee, becoming Cherokee citizens by adoption. They have always lived in a neighborhood by themselves near the town of Bluejacket, and have preserved many of their ancient customs and many of them still speak the Shawnee language. They are progressive and many of them are well educated. There are in all about fifteen hundred Shawnee Indians in Oklahoma, the number being nearly equally divided between the Black Bob and the Absentee Shawnee, with a few also living among the Seneca.

Wea and Piankeshaw.—Two tribes of the Algonquian stock, originally sub-tribes of the Miami. Their history has much in common with that of the Miami and the tribes of the Illinois Confederacy. In 1832 the two tribes were consolidated and moved to Kansas. Some years later they were consolidated with the Peoria and other Illinois tribes, since which event their history has been identical with that of the Peoria.

The Athapascan Tribes.

Apache of the Plains.—A tribe of Athapascan stock, having only a remote relationship to the Apache proper. They called themselves Na-i-shan-dina, meaning "our people."

The Apache of the Plains have been closely associated with the Kiowa from the traditional period. They really form a part of the

Kiowa tribal circle though they still speak their own language. In early French records and down to their first treaty with the Government (1837) they were called by various forms of the Pawnee word, "Gattacka," though Major S. H. Long, in his report of his explorations in the West in 1819-20, calls them "Kaskaia" or "Bad Hearts." Having come from the North with the Kiowa, they have no connection with the Apache proper other than the linguistic affinity as common members of the Athapascan family. LaSalle mentioned the Gattacka in 1631 as a tribe from whom the Pawnee bought horses which were probably stolen from the Spanish settlements, so it is probable that the Apache of the Plains (and the Kiowa also) ranged well to the south even at that early date. In 1805 they were living near the Black Hills. Half a century later they were ranging between the Arkansas and Red Rivers. They have always lived with the Kiowa, except between the years 1865 and 1867, when they were with the Cheyenne and Arapaho. Their history is, therefore, practically identical with that of the Kiowa.

PACER
Apache Chief

Apache.—(Chiracahua.) From a word in the Pima language signifying "enemies." The Chiracahua Apache are a branch of the Apache proper, a tribe of Indians inhabiting Southwestern New Mexico and Sotheastern Arizona, whose bloody forays extended over the greater portions of those Territories and also parts of Texas, Colorado and the Republic of Mexico. Because of their restless and sanguinary disposition they came to be regarded as one of the fiercest and most implacable tribes on the continent.

The Chiracahua, under the leadership of Geronimo, were the last of the Apache to surrender, which they did in 1886. They were then transported to Fort Marion, Florida, where they were kept until 1890, when they were brought to Oklahoma and placed on the Fort Sill reservation. There they yet remain as prisoners of war. They have no allotments and, strictly speaking, are not regarded as citizens of the United States, as all of the other Indians in Oklahoma are. While their presence in Oklahoma under any circumstances is of passing interest, yet they have had no part in the history of the state, having lived as prisoners of war during all the years since their surrender.

The Caddoan Tribes.

Caddo or Kadohadacho.—"Ka-dohadacho," meaning in their own language "real Caddo" or "Caddo proper," as distinguished from the Caddo confederacy, of which it was the principal of the ten constituent tribes.

The ancient seat of the Caddo was in the lower part of the Red River Valley. They were met by Cabeça de Vaca in 1535-6, by De Soto in 1541, by the followers of La Salle in 1687, and by La Harpe in 1719. At a very early date the Caddo obtained horses from the Spanish settlements through the medium of other tribes who lived farther west. They learned to rear these animals, which they in turn traded to Indians of the tribes to the north and east of them. They early came under French influence and were always loyal in their alliances. Occupying disputed ground in the contentions of the French and Spanish, the Caddo suffered from war and devastation, their numbers being seriously reduced and several of the cognate tribes being practically exterminated. Thus the people of a peaceful tribe, who had been distinguished for their thrift, were driven from their cultivated fields to become a demoralized band of wanderers.

GEORGE WASHINGTON
Caddo Chief

The acquisition of Louisiana by the United States only served to increase the troubles of the Caddo. Finally, in 1835, they ceded all of their lands to the Government and agreed to move, at their own expense, beyond the borders of the United States. They then moved westward into Texas. The Texans were then battling for their independence from Mexico and were suspicious of the Caddo, though without just reason. The Republic of Texas sent a commission to treat with the Caddo and other tribes along the Red River in 1843. Although the commission attempted to establish a line between the Indians and the white settlements, the land laws of the Republic had been so framed that they did not recognize the Indian's right to occupancy. Any white settler could dispossess the Indians at will, and the latter had neither recourse nor recompense. Much suffering ensued on account of such unjust and cruel treatment.

As the white immigrants poured into Texas the buffalo were driven farther back and food for the impoverished Indians became scarce. Warlike tribes made reprisals, but the indiscriminating settlers were ever ready to blame the peaceful and law-abiding Caddo for the unruliness of the wild tribes. After Texas was annexed to the United States the Caddo appealed to the Federal Government for protection. In 1855 a tract near the Brazos River was secured for them. There they opened up farms, built homes, sent their children to school and lived quietly and unobtrusively. Meanwhile the Kiowa and Comanche continued to harass the white settlements, and for this, because they too, were Indians, the Caddo were visited by the wrath of the offended whites. Finally in 1859 a date was fixed for the extermination of all these reservation Indians. Learning of this plot the Caddo hastily abandoned their homes and most of their belongings and fled northward into the Indian Territory, where they found refuge among the Wichita, Waco and Tawakony, which tribes were originally of Caddoan stock. In thus escaping with their lives the Caddo were indebted to the fidelity, tact and courageous leadership of Robert S. Neighbors, U. S. Supervising Agent, and S. P. Ross, Indian Agent, in charge. As a penalty for his faithfulness to duty, Agent Neighbors was afterwards assassinated, it is said, by enemies of the Caddo tribe. During the Civil War, which followed shortly afterward, the Caddo were loyal to the Federal Government. In common with the Wichita and other tribes with which they were federated, they went North, taking refuge in Colorado, where they remained until 1867. They then returned to the Washita Valley, where they were given a reservation in common with the affiliated tribes. Their lands were allotted in severalty in 1901, the surplus lands being opened to settlement. Since 1859 the history of this tribe has been practically identical with that of the Wichita. The Caddo have long been regarded as one of the most progressive tribes in the United States.

The Caddo tribe absorbed the surviving remnants of several of the other tribes of the Caddoan confederacy, among them the Adai, the Anadarko, Eyeish, etc.

Keechi or Kichai.—From "Kitsash," their own name. A tribe of Caddoan stock closely allied to the Pawnee.

The Keechi were met by the French explorers in the upper part of the Red River Valley in the early part of the eighteenth century. They seemed to be on intimate terms with the Caddo on the east, and the Wichita, which were their neighbors, on the west. They were adherents of the French and suffered great loss

in the wars between the French and the Spanish. They also decreased very rapidly in numbers as the result of the introduction of contagious diseases and intoxicants by the whites. They were located by the Federal Government on a reservation near the Brazos River with the Caddo in 1855, since which time their history has been practically identical with that of the Caddo.

Pawnee.—From "pariki," meaning "a horn" and having allusion to the peculiar way in which they dressed the scalplock. This mark indicates a Pawnee in the pictographs of the Plains tribes and doubtless also is the source of the tribal sign which means "wolf people." The Pawnee were divided into four sub-tribes, namely, the Grand Pawnee, the Pawnee Republican, Pawnee Tapage and Skeedee or Pawnee Loup (wolf). The last mentioned is said to have been a distinct tribe, though of kindred stock, which was conquered and incorporated in the Pawnee Nation. The Pawnee called themselves "skihiksihiks," meaning "men of men," or "superexcellent men."

The Pawnee were of Caddoan stock, speaking practically the same language as the Wichita and Arickaree. Their traditions are to the effect that the tribe migrated northward from the Red River. When first known by white men, they inhabited the valley of the Platte in Nebraska and that of the Republican, in Kansas, though they frequently roamed as far south as the Arkansas. The Pawnee were formerly very numerous, their numbers being estimated at 10,000 as late as 1834. They were very warlike, being constantly engaged in warfare with all of the neighboring tribes except the Omaha, Oto and Ponca, which they treated as dependents. The Pawnee suffered greatly by several smallpox epidemics, over two thousand dying during the year 1838 alone. In 1849 they were attacked by a plague of cholera, which caused even a greater loss of life. In 1874 they sold the last of their lands in Nebraska and shortly afterward moved to a small reservation situated near the confluence of the Arkansas and Cimarron Rivers in Oklahoma. In 1893 their lands were allotted in severalty, the surplus lands being thrown open to white settlement. In numbers they have decreased until the strength of the tribe is scarcely a tithe of its former greatness.

Wichita.—Possibly from the Comanche term Ab-ta-witche, meaning "other people." The Wichita called themselves Kitikitasche. By the Spanish they were called Jumanos. The French called them Pawnee Pique, meaning "Tatooed Pawnee," because of the custom of the members of the tribe (particularly the women) who tatooed their faces, arms and breasts. From this name came

the origin of the earlier American designation for that tribe, namely, Pawnee Pict. The French also called them Les Quichaatcha, or Les Cortes Jambes (literally "the short legs"). The word Quichaatcha was probably the Caddo origin. A later French form of the word (latter part of the Eighteenth Century) was Ouicita. The Wichita name for corn, or maize, was tay-hass, which was rendered into Spanish as tejas. The Wichita were always an agricultural people, and the significance of the name Tejas, as applied to them, was literally that of "corn Indians." The word Texas is said to have originated from the corruption of the word Tejas. The name Toyash, or Towiache, by which the Wichita were still known in the early part of the last century was also another form of the same word.

WICHITA CHIEF, 1834
(From Painting by Catlin)

The Wichita are a tribe of Caddoan stock, closely related to the Pawnee, Arickaree, Tawakony and Waco. Under the name of the Teya they were met by Coronado, in the Plains, in 1541. They made their first treaty with the Government, at Fort Gibson, in 1834, as the result of the visit of an exploring expedition to their village, on the North Fork of the Red River, close to the Wichita Mountains. In 1851 they were living on Cache Creek, near the site on which Fort Sill was afterwards built. In 1859 they were assigned to a reservation north of the Washita. From this they fled at the outbreak of the Civil War, taking refuge at the mouth of the Little Arkansas, in Kansas. They returned to their reservation in 1867. In 1901 their lands were allotted in severalty, the surplus being opened to white settlement.

Like the other tribes of the Caddoan linguistic family, the Wichita have always followed agricultural pursuits. They raised corn, beans, pumpkins, melons, etc., and their neighbors, the Kiowa, Comanche, and other tribes, which lived exclusively by the chase, used to enjoy visiting them in the season of green corn. They were not nomads but had fixed places of residence, living in large conical huts of grass-thatched construction. They have always been peaceably disposed as well as industrious. They are now, as they always have been, a self-supporting people.

Waco (or Hueco) and Tawakony.—These are two small tribes of Caddoan stock which have long been associated and allied with the Wichita, to which tribe they are most closely related. Their history and habits are almost identical with those of the Wichita, and the three have been practically incorporated into one tribe for nearly fifty years past.

The Iroquoian Tribes.

Cherokee.—From "tsalagee" or "tsaragee," the name by which they commonly called themselves, which it is said may have been derived from the Choctaw term, "chilukkee," meaning "cave people," in allusion to the numerous caves in their mountain country. They sometimes also called themselves "Ani-yun-wiya," meaning "real people."

The Cherokee were a powerful tribe of the Iroquois stock, far removed from the other tribes of that family, their original domain having included the mountains of the Southern Apalachian system in Virginia, North and South Carolina, Georgia, Alabama, Tennessee and Kentucky. There were three divisions or tribes, namely, Lower, Middle, and Upper Cherokee, each of which had its own dialect. The dialect of the Upper Cherokee was the one which was reduced to writing, and, all of their literature being in that dialect, it has survived and really supplanted the other two. Although the Cherokee were living in the Southern Apalachian system as far back as the time of the De Soto expedition in 1540, their traditions and language indicate that they came from the North.

The Cherokee came in contact with the English shortly after the settlement of the Carolinas in the latter part of the seventeenth century. In 1736 a French Jesuit by the name of Priber established the first mission among them and attempted to organize their government. In 1759 the Cherokee made war on the English colonists of the Carolinas. During the Revolution the Cherokee sided with Great Britain against the Colonies, and remained hostile to the people of the United States almost continuously until 1794.

Late in the eighteenth century, mission churches and schools were first established among the Cherokee. In 1827 the Cherokee adopted a tribal constitution, which was republican in form, having legislative, judicial and executive departments. A few years earlier Sequoyah, who was a mixed blood Cherokee, invented the Cherokee alphabet. This, which made possible the printing of books and newspapers in their own language, was the greatest single achievement of this already progressive tribe.

For years the white settlements had been encroaching upon Cherokee territory. Finally, gold was discovered in the Cherokee country in Northern Georgia, and the people of Georgia thereupon became clamorous for the removal of the Cherokee. The latter strongly resisted all efforts to remove them, although part of their people had moved west of the Mississippi in the migrations which occurred in 1785-1794 and 1809. After years of hopeless struggle, during which the Cherokee were subjected to every form of annoyance, persecution and coercion, part of them finally submitted to the inevitable and agreed to sell the remainder of their lands east of the Mississippi by the Treaty of New Echota, December 29, 1835. The treaty was opposed by the major portion of the tribe, but in the end they were forced to accept its terms. The final removal of the tribe took place during the winter of 1838-9. The Cherokee literally had to be forced from their homes by troops under the command of Gen. Winfield Scott. This migration was the cause of great hardship to the Cherokee, one-fourth of their number dying during or immediately after the journey.

Upon their arrival in the new Cherokee country a dispute arose as to which tribal government should be recognized. The contentions over this question continued for some years. Party lines were also closely drawn between those who had favored the treaty for the removal of the tribe to the West, and those who had opposed. John Ross, who was the leader of the anti-treaty party, was continued as the principal chief of the reunited Cherokee Nation.

The Cherokee were fairly prosperous in their way. Many of them had large farms which were well stocked, and upon which they raised fields of grain and cotton, some of them owning negro slaves. At the outbreak of the Civil War, the Cherokee were at first disposed to remain neutral, but were finally won to an alliance with the Confederacy in the autumn of 1861. Fifteen months later the Cherokee Council repudiated the alliance with the Confederate States and thereafter the Nation was divided into two factions, the one supporting the Union and the other the Confederacy.

The return of peace found the Cherokee much reduced, both in numbers and wealth, but by devoting themselves to the pursuit of peaceful vocations they were soon prospering.

The Cherokee may be regarded as one of the finest type of the Indian race. Their influence and their example have always tended to the inspiration and the improvement of the other tribes with whom they have come in contact, and by whom they have been regarded as elder brothers and leaders. There is every reason to be-

lieve that this same influence will be felt in the progress of the new state of Oklahoma.

Huron or Wyandotte.—Huron, from the French word "Hure," signifying "rough" or "uncouth," the appelation having been applied to riotors and rebels in France. The people of this tribe or confederation who called themselves Wendat, the meaning of which is "islander," or "they who dwell on a peninsula;" a confederation of four tribes of Iroquois stock, whose domain was east of Lake Huron in Canada.

The Wyandotte, or Huron Iroquois, were probably met by Jaques Cartier in the course of his voyages of exploration up the St. Lawrence River in 1534 and 1543. At that time the Huron and the Iroquois tribes south of the St. Lawrence were at war. It was a war of extermination, apparently, the remnant of the Huron being driven northward and westward prior to the coming of Champlain in 1603. This war, waged by the Iroquois Five Nations of New York, continued till the Huron Iroquois were almost annihilated in 1648-50. The Iroquois of the Five Nations, having obtained firearms from the Dutch traders of New York, made quick work of their conquest. Few of the Huron escaped, and all of the captives not killed were absorbed or adopted into membership of the several tribes constituting the Five Nations. No matter which way the scattered and demoralized survivors fled, the relentless fury of the Iroquois Confederacy of the Five Nations followed. Indeed, for any other tribe to offer an asylum to the exiled Huron was to invite war with the Iroquois Confederacy. A small remnant of the Huron took refuge on Charity Island, Georgian Bay, but the sleepless Iroquois of New York would not let them remain there in peace. Next their flight led them to Michilimacinac, but again the prying eyes of the tireless enemy found them out. They then retreated still farther westward to Manitoulin and thence to Pottawatomie Island at the entrance to Green Bay on the western shore of Lake Michigan. The Pottawatomie, an Algonquian tribe, and avowed enemies of the Five Nations, offered the fugitive Huron a refuge in their Wisconsin domain. Even in that far country the relentless hate of their old enemies still followed them, and, in addition, the jealousy of their new neighbors, the Sioux, was aroused. So, until a treaty was made between the French and the Iroquois Confederacy in 1666, the hunted Hurons found little rest. They then returned to Michilimacinac. All this time the French Catholic missionaries had followed the wandering Huron. Later on, the Huron established themselves at Sandusky, Ohio; Detroit, Michigan; and Sandwich, Ontario. In 1747 the Huron, (then and

since known as Wyandotte) under the leadership of their war chief, Orontony, acting probably under the inspiration of English agents, formed a league with a number of other western tribes for the purpose of driving the French out of the region of the Great Lakes. The plot was exposed, however, and, in the end, came to naught. The Huron, or Wyandotte, though few in numbers, soon attained a great degree of influence among the tribes between the Great Lakes and the Ohio River, even outranking the Delaware in the inter-tribal councils. The Wyandotte supported the French during the French and Indian War, a part of their warriors being at the defeat of Braddock on the Monongahela. They also joined with Pontiac in his effort to dislodge the British from the Great Lakes. Thereafter they adhered to the British and were hostile to the Americans during the War for Independence. During the second war with Great Britain, the Wyandotte were divided, part of the tribe siding with the Americans and part with the British. By the treaty of 1815 a large reservation was set aside for the Wyandotte in Northwestern Ohio and Southeastern Michigan. Part of this tract was sold by the Wyandotte in 1819 and the remaining portions were disposed of in 1842, shortly after which they moved to a reservation at the mouth of the Kansas River. By the treaty of 1855 the Wyandotte became citizens, but twelve years later the tribal relations were re-established and the tribe moved to a small reservation in the northeastern part of the Indian Territory. The Wyandotte lands have been divided and allotted.

Seneca.—The name of one of the Iroquois Five Nations. Besides the Five Nations, namely, the Onondaga, Cayuga, Seneca and Mohawk, the northern group of Iroquois tribes included the Huron (Wyandotte), the Eriga (or Erie), the Conestoga and the Neutral Nation. Against the last mentioned tribes of kindred stock, the Indians of the Five Nations waged a relentless war of extermination about the middle of the seventeenth century. The Huron or Wyandotte, were greatly reduced in numbers, while the other three tribes were practically annihilated, at least so far as separate tribal existance was concerned, for the Five Nations adopted into their own tribes all prisoners which they did not kill. It is believed that some of the Erie and possibly a few of the Conestoga escaped the general destruction of their tribes by flight, finding refuge in the Ohio Valley, where they were known as the Mingo, and where they continued to live until after the American Revolution. They then moved over and settled on the Sandusky River, where they became known as the Seneca of Sandusky, probably because all western

Iroquois were regarded as Seneca. They were known by that name in their first treaty with the United States and have been so designated ever since.

About 1800, the Seneca of Sandusky were joined by a part of the Cayuga, who had sold their lands in New York. In 1831 these Indians sold their lands in Ohio and moved to a new reservation on the Neosho River in Kansas. In 1867 they sold their Kansas lands and moved to a small reservation in what is now Ottawa county, Oklahoma, where they still reside. They are now in an advanced state of civilization.

The Kiowan Tribes.

Kiowa.—From Gä-i-gwu or Ka-i-gwu, meaning in their own language, "principal people." Linguistically this tribe stands alone.

The Kiowa were first mentioned in the Spanish records in 1732. Their ancient seat, according to their own traditions and those of other tribes, was about the source of the Missouri River, in Montana. Later, they moved southward, forming an alliance with the Crow Indians, in Wyoming. In 1805 they were reported as living on the North Platte. They continued to drift southward along the eastern base of the Rocky Mountains, probably retiring before the advance of the Cheyenne and Arapaho in the same direction. When they reached the Arkansas River, in Eastern Colorado, their further progress was opposed by the Comanche, who claimed all the land south of that stream. A short war followed about 1795. Peace brought with it a confederation of these two tribes, together with the Apache of the Plains, which continues to the present time. They made peace with the Cheyenne and Arapaho about 1840 and very generally acted in concert with these tribes in subsequent wars. With the Comanche they waged almost continuous warfare on the Mexican frontier and the white settlements in Texas. Their first treaty with the Government of the United States was made in 1837. Subsequent treaties were made, jointly with the two confederated tribes. As a wild tribe they were predatory and bloodthirsty. They agreed to accept a reservation by the treaty of Medicine Lodge in 1867, but many of them did not permanently locate upon it until the buffalo were finally exterminated on the Southern Plains eight years later. Their last outbreak was in 1874-5, when most of the Southern Plains tribes took the warpath. In 1901 the Kiowa accepted allotments of land in severalty, the surplus lands of their reservation being thrown open to white settlement. They are making fair progress towards civilization.

The Lutuamian Tribes.

Modoc.—From Makalaks, meaning "the people."

The Modoc were a warlike tribe of Lutuamian stock, living originally in Northern California and Southern Oregon. The Modoc were hostile to the whites most of the time from the first settlement of the Pacific coast. In 1873, a band of hostile Modoc, when pursued by troops, retreated to the lava beds of Oregon, where they made a stout resistance. While parleying with General E. R. S. Canby, department commander, relative to terms of peace, the Modoc killed General Canby and other members of the peace commission. For this treacherous act, Captain Jack and three other Modoc leaders were hung and their followers numbering one hundred and forty-five were transported to the Indian Territory and located on a small reservation in what is now Ottawa county, where they have since lived. The rest of the Modoc reside on the Klamath Reservation in Oregon.

The Muskhogean Tribes.

Chickasaw.—An important tribe of Muskhogean stock, most closely related to the Choctaw, with which tribe they have long been allied under the name of Chicaza. They were met by the expedition of DeSoto in 1540. Their ancient domain was east of the Mississippi River, extending southward from the Ohio across Western Kentucky and Tennessee as far as the headwaters of the Yazoo River in Northern Mississippi. They were very warlike and claimed territory far beyond the region where they ordinarily roamed.

GOV. D. H. JOHNSTON
Chickasaw Nation

The Chickasaw have always been known as a brave, independent and warlike people. They were usually at war with some of the neighboring tribes, including the Cherokee, Creek, Illinois, Shawnee, Osage and Quapaw. In 1732 they defeated a war party of Iroquois which had invaded their country. They were relentless enemies of the French, having been brought under the influence of traders from the British Colonies at an early day. The Chickasaw joined with the Cherokee

in driving the Shawnee out of the Cumberland Valley about 1715. Fifty years later they were at war with the Cherokee.

The Chickasaw made their first treaty with the United States in 1786. A few of them began to migrate west of the Mississippi during the first years of the nineteenth century, and another migration took place in 1822, but the main body of the tribe did not move to the Indian Territory until after 1837, when they purchased an interest in the Choctaw country. In 1855 the Chickasaw district was separated from the Choctaw Nation and the Chickasaw then proceeded to organize a government of their own with a written constitution. Although the Chickasaw and Choctaw have thus been

CHICKASAW CAPITOL, TISHOMINGO

entirely distinct for more than half a century, they have always been in close alliance, and always acted together in making treaties and agreements with the Government.

During the Civil War the Chickasaw sided with the Southern States, very few of them remaining loyal to the Union. The Chickasaw furnished several bodies of organized troops to the Confederate military service.

The Chickasaw government was republican in form, their principal chief being known as governor, and their council as the legislature. The Chickasaw capital was at Tishomingo.

Choctaw.—Believed to be a corruption of the Spanish word "chato," meaning "flat" or "flattened," having allusion to the custom of these Indians flattening the head.

The Choctaw was one of the most important tribes of the Muskhogean stock. They formerly occupied Middle and Southern Mississippi and Central Alabama.

DeSoto came in contact with the Choctaw on his expedition in 1540. When the French began to establish colonies on the Lower Mississippi and on the Gulf Coast, the Choctaw soon became friendly with them and acted as their allies in wars against other Indian tribes. A part of the Eastern Choctaw were won by the English traders to the support of English interests, but the main body of the tribe remained loyal to the French till the end of French rule in the Mississippi Valley in 1763. Some of the Choctaw crossed the Mississippi shortly afterward. During the war of 1812 they remained loyal to their friendship for the United States, though urged to join the leagues of Indian tribes which had been organized in support of British interests.

GOV. GREEN McCURTAIN
Choctaw Nation

The Choctaw were assigned to a new reservation between the Red and Canadian Rivers by a treaty which was signed in 1825. A large part of the tribe moved west of the Mississippi shortly afterward. By the treaty of Dancing Rabbit Creek, which was signed in 1830, they relinquished the rest of their lands east of the Mississippi, and the main body of the tribe then moved west to their new reservation.

During the Civil War the Choctaw were almost unanimous in their support of the Confederacy. In common with the other Five Civilized Tribes they suffered greatly from the effects of the war.

The Choctaw were pre-eminently the most progressive of the tribes which came to Oklahoma from the Gulf States. They were always engaged extensively in agriculture and have excelled as farmers in a civilized state. The Choctaw nation was the second tribe to adopt a written constitution. They have always taken great interest in the education of their youth, having besides a regularly organized public school system, a number of acadamies and seminaries. The capital of the Choctaw Nation was located at Tuskahoma.

Creek.—So named by the English colonists because their country abounded in creeks and small streams. The Creek were known

as the Muscogee, the origin and meaning of which name is unknown; a confederacy embracing the largest division of the Muskhogean group.

The Creek Indians lived in the southern part of Alabama and Georgia and Northern Florida. They were probably met by De Narvaez and Cabeça de Vaca in 1536, by DeSoto in 1540, by Tristan de Luna in 1559, and by Juan del Pardo in 1567. Originally the Muscogee Nation consisted of several tribes, including the Coosa, Coweta and possibly one or two others. The Muskhogean tribes

CREEK CAPITOL, OKMULGEE

were frequently at war with the tribes to the north and east of them, including the Cherokee, Iroquois, Catawba, and some of the Algonquian tribes. It is probable that a succession of such wars and invasions led to the formation of the Muskhogean Confederacy in the early part of the eighteenth century. The Muskhogean Confederacy included, besides the Muscogee proper, the Koasati, the Hitchiti, the Enchee, the Nachez, and one branch of the Shawnee, all speaking different languages. The Koasati had absorbed a part of the ancient tribe Alibamu. Eventually this Confederacy came

to be regarded as one tribe or nation, though some of those ancient distinctions are even yet observed among the so-called Creek people. A few years before the Creek Confederacy was formed the Muscogee proper acted as the allies of the English forces, in 1703-8, during the Apalachee wars, one of the results of which was the absorption of a large part of the surviving Apalachees by the Muscogee tribe.

The Creek were uniformly friendly to the whites during the development of the English colonies. At the outbreak of the second war between the United States and Great Britain the Creek joined in the hostilities of the Indians against the United States, largely as a result of the persuasive eloquence of Tecumseh. This Creek war, as it has since been known, resulted in the defeat of the Creeks, at the Battle of the Horseshoe, after a vigorous campaign under Gen. Andrew Jackson. Prior to this time part of the Creek people had withdrawn south of the national frontier into Florida, which was then Spanish territory, and were henceforth known as the Seminoles. After the conclusion of the Creek War of 1813-14 by the treaty of Fort Jackson, the Creek ceded a large part of their lands to the United States. Later cessions followed until, by the treaty at Washington, March 24, 1832, the Creek sold the remainder of their lands to the Government and agreed to move to a new reservation west of the Mississippi. Some of the Creek had moved to the west even before that time, and the movement of the main body of the tribe took place during the years 1836-40, inclusive.

The Creek were prospering in their western home in the Indian Territory at the outbreak of the Civil War, but that event brought dissension and disaster to their tribe. Part of the Creek remained loyal to the Federal Government, while others pledged their allegiance to the Confederacy. Devastation, havoc and suffering followed, and the close of the war found the Creek people in an impoverished condition. Many of the Creek had owned slaves and, on one of the conditions of the new treaty with the Government, they had to grant the rights to tribal citizenship to these slaves which had been freed. By the same treaty (June, 1866) the Creek agreed to cede the western part of their reservation upon which the Government should have the right to locate other friendly and pacific tribes. A few years later (1870) the first railroad built into the Indian Territory passed across the Creek country. For a score of years changes were few. Then came the opening of the Oklahoma country, followed by the building of new railroads, the appointment of the Commission to treat with the Five Civilized

Tribes, the discovery of oil and gas, the allotment of lands, the building of cities and towns, and ultimately, statehood.

Seminole.—From "Simanoli, meaning "seceder" or "runaway." A tribe of Muskhogean stock, originally a part of the Creek, or Muscogee proper.

After the destruction and deportation of the Apalachee and Timucua by the English in 1702-3, some of the Muscogee moved down into the Florida peninsula thus depopulated, where they were afterward joined by Indians of other tribes, including the Yamassee, which were driven out of the Carolinas by the English in 1715. For many years they were known as "the Lower Creek," but in time they came to be recognized as a separate tribe.

GOV. JOHN F. BROWN
Seminole Nation

In 1817-18 the Seminole became involved in conflict with the United States and, though their country was in Spanish territory, it was invaded by a force of American troops under Gen. Andrew Jackson, several of their towns being destroyed. By the terms of the treaty of Payne's Landing, made in 1832, the Seminole were to move west of the Mississippi, but a large part of the tribe, following the lead of a chief named Osceola, having repudiated that agreement, a long and costly war followed. This war, which caused the loss of the lives of a thousand settlers and soldiers and an expenditure of $10,000,000.00 in money, did not end until 1842, shortly after which the main body of the Seminole moved to the Creek country in the Indian Territory. There they became dissatisfied because of their incorporation into the Creek Nation, the result being that they were given a reservation of their own and, thereafter, they conducted their own tribal affairs.

During the Civil War the Seminole were divided, many espousing the cause of the Confederacy, while others remained devotedly loyal to the Union. One of the results of the war was that the Seminole had to relinquish a large part of their former reservation, which lay between the two Canadian Rivers.

The Seminole was the only one of the Five Civilized Tribes which did not have a written constitution and laws. The capitol or council house of the Seminole was at Wewoka.

The Shoshonean Tribes.

Comanche.—From "camanche," a Spanish term for "serpent" or "snake." A Shoshonean tribe which drifted out from the Rocky Mountains on the Great Plains, presumably about three hundred years ago. The Comanche were originally an offshoot of the Shoshone, or Snake tribe of Indians, who still live in the mountains of Wyoming and Idaho. Both tribes speak the same dialect, and until a comparatively recent period they kept up a more or less frequent friendly communication. The gesture or motion by which this tribe is designated in the sign language common to all tribes is that of an imitation of the movement of the snake and the various names by which it is known to other tribes all have the same signification. The Comanche lived side by side with their kinsmen of the Shoshone, in Southern Wyoming, until they were crowded by the Absaroka and other Siouan tribes, the Shoshone retiring farther into the mountains, and the Comanche moving southward and out on the Plains.

HORSEBACK
Comanche Chief

The Comanche early came in conflict with the Spanish, with whom they were at war most of the time for over two hundred years. When they became possessed of horses they ranged over the territory between the Platte and Red Rivers and, when raiding, even went far beyond the Rio Grande, into Mexico. Du Bourgmont visited them at the Arkansas River, in Central Kansas, in 1724. By the French the Comanche were called the Paudouca, a name adopted from the Osage. The Comanche, the Kiowa and Apache of the Plains formed a confederation over a hundred years ago, which they still maintain.

The Comanche made their first treaty with the Government in 1835. Up to that time the Comanche had, in general, been friendly to the whites. Shortly afterward the Republic of Texas attempted to exclude the Comanche from part of their old hunting grounds, whereupon the Comanche began raiding the Texas settlements, killing men, carrying women and children into captivity, and running off stock, a diversion from which they did not cease for nearly forty years. When Texas was annexed to the United States in 1845, the strong

arm of the Federal Government was invoked to stay the incursions of the predatory Comanche. The only effect of this effort was to incur the enmity of the Comanche against all Americans, with the result that few and short were the intervals of peace on the Southern Plains region until the disappearance of the buffalo forced the

COMANCHE WARRIORS MEETING DRAGONS, 1834
(From Painting by Catlin)

Comanche to retire to a reservation where they could draw rations. Since 1875 the Comanche have traveled only in the paths of peace. In the first year of the new century they accepted allotments and are making commendable progress in their efforts to travel "the white man's road."

The Siouan Tribes.

Iowa.—Meaning "sleepy ones." A tribe of Siouan stock of close kindred with the Missouri and Oto.

Under various names, such as Pahoji, Aiaouez, Ioways, Ayavois, Aoues and Pahutet, the Iowa ranged over a large part of Wisconsin, Minnesota, Illinois, Iowa, Missouri and Nebraska during the historical period or immediately prior to that in the traditional period. They were known to the French from the time of Marquette's visit to the Mississippi (1673). They were actively engaged in gathering peltries for the fur trade. They also cultivated corn, beans, pumpkins, etc. Although they have probably lived west of the Missouri

River (in Nebraska) for at least a century past, they still claimed ownership of lands in Missouri until 1824, when they relinquished these claims to the Government by treaty. In 1836 they were given a reservation in Northeastern Kansas. From there a part of the tribe was afterward moved to a new reservation in the Indian Territory (1876). In 1890 their lands were allotted in severalty, the surplus lands being thrown open to white settlement the following year.

Kansas or Kaw.—Origin and signification of name unknown. A Siouan tribe of the Dhegiha groupe, probably an offshoot of the Osage and closely related to the Quapaw.

The first authentic record of the Kansas is the statement of Governor Juan de Onate, of New Mexico, that he met the "Escanaques," who were neighbors of the "Panama" (Pawnee). Bourgmont met the "Quans" (Kansas) in Northeastern Kansas in 1724. The Kansas early came under French influence. Indeed, it is stated that several Kansas (or Kaw) Indians arrived on the Monongahela just too late to participate in the fight in which Braddock was defeated in 1755, though it is believed that this tradition refers to Pontiac's War. The Kansas tribe entered into its first treaty with the United States on October 28, 1815. The tribe then numbered about fifteen hundred people. By the terms of the second treaty with the United States (June 3, 1825), the Kansas relinquished all the claims to lands in Missouri and Nebraska and a large part of their lands in Kansas, also. The Kansas were nearly always at war with the Pawnee. The tribe suffered severely from epidemics, particularly from the smallpox. In 1843 the tribe reported a total population of fifteen hundred and eighty-eight, but since that time there has been an almost constant decrease.

By the treaty of January 14, 1846, the Kansas ceded to the United States 2,000,000 acres from the eastern part of their reservation. They then moved to Council Grove, on the Upper Neosho, where they continued to live until 1873. Their Neosho reservation was sold because of the constant intrusion of settlers, and the present reservation in Oklahoma was purchased from the Osage. The Kansas have had the lands of their reservation allotted in severalty. As a tribe the Kansas have been very slow to adopt the ways of civilization. Although every provision was made to induce them to abandon their old habits and conform to the customs of civilization while they were on the Neosho reservation in Kansas, they made practically no change during that time. In more recent years, changed conditions and the death of the older and more conservative tribesmen have brought about a change in the attitude of the tribe toward the new order of things.

Osage.—From "Ouasage," the French form of "Washashe" or "Wasash," the name by which they were known to the Indians of other tribes.

The Osage are a tribe of the Dhegiha branch of Siouan stock, most closely related to the Kaw and Quapaw. The Osage formerly claimed and overran a great region which embraced a large part of the states of Missouri, Kansas, Arkansas and Oklahoma. Though they were a warlike people and seldom or never at peace with some of the neighboring tribes, including the Chickasaw, Pawnee, Kiowa and Cheyenne, they rarely had trouble with the whites. Their friendship was cultivated by the French, to whom they remained attached until French power prevailed no longer in the valley of the Mississippi.

BLACK DOG, OSAGE, 1834
(From Painting by Catlin)

The Osage began ceding their lands to the United States by treaty in 1808, their last cession being in 1870. They usually drove good bargains, the purchase price being left on deposit with the United States Treasury, the Osage drawing only the interest on it. Their Oklahoma reservation to which the Osage moved in 1872, has proven to be rich in oil and natural gas, the royalties from which have added to the wealth of the Osage. They are said to be the richest community in the world today, the average wealth of each member of the tribe being somewhere near $25,000.00.

Although the tendency of excessive wealth just at the time of the change to ways of civilization is such as to hinder rather than help that process, yet many of the Osage are noted for their progressive spirit and enterprise.

Oto and Missouri.—Two small confederated tribes of the Chiwere branch of Siouan stock, closely related also to the Iowa. The meaning of the name Oto is unknown. The word Missouri is from an Algonquian term signifying "great muddy."

The Oto and Missouri originally lived side by side north of the Missouri River in the state of Missouri. They first came to the notice of white men in Marquette's time. The French began trading with these tribes soon after the first explorations of the Mississippi Valley. The two tribes suffered greatly from smallpox epidemics. In 1798, during a war with the Sac and Fox, they were driven westward across the Missouri River, after which they continued to live in Northeastern Kansas and Southeastern Nebraska. In 1823 the Oto and Missouri were united as one tribe. Both tribes speak the same language.

In 1882 these tribes were given a small reservation in Oklahoma (Noble County), where they still reside. The confederated tribes have constantly decreased in numbers. They are among the least progressive Indians in Oklahoma, making practically no effort at self-support, but depending entirely upon annuities and money received from the rental of lands.

Ponca.—A small tribe of the Dhegiha group of Siouan stock, closely related to the Osage, Kaw, Quapaw and Omaha tribes.

The Ponca lived in Northeastern Nebraska and seem to have been peaceably disposed, though frequently at war with the Sioux. With the Pawnee, Omaha and Oto they were generally in a state of friendly alliance. The lands occupied by the Ponca were also claimed by the Sioux and, by the latter, were ceded to the Government. The Government thereupon forcibly removed the Ponca to a reservation in the Indian Territory in 1877. During and immediately after the migration of the Ponca there was so much sickness and so many deaths among them that some of them, fearing extermination, broke away and returned to Nebraska, where they were eventually permitted to remain. The main body of the tribe still resides on the Ponca reservation in Kay and Noble counties.

Quapaw.—From "Aguapa," meaning "down stream people." A tribe of the Siouan stock most closely related to the Osage, Kaw, Omaha and Ponca. They were met in Arkansas in 1541 by DeSoto, who called them the Capaha. They early came under French influence and were generally at war with the Chickasaw, who lived on the opposite side of the Mississippi. In 1818 they sold most of their lands in Arkansas. A few years later part of them went to dwell with the Caddo on the Red River, but, finding that region not suited to their condition, they returned. After the settlement of

the tribes from the east of the Mississippi in the Indian Territory, the Quapaw sold their reservation in Arkansas and moved to a new one within the present limits of Ottawa County, Oklahoma, where their descendents still live. As a tribe they are progressive and prosperous, though few in number as compared with their former strength.

The Tonkawan Tribes.

Tonkawa.—From the Waco word "tonkawea," meaning "many staying together." A tribe of distinct linguistic stock, originally from the valleys of the Colorado and Guadaloupe Rivers, in Southern Texas. They called themselves Titskan-watich, meaning "indigenous men."

The Tonkawa was one of the very few tribes of North American Indians which were noted as cannibals. They were nomadic in their habits, built circular thatched huts, and lived mainly on game and wild fruits, nuts and roots. They were at war with most of the neighboring tribes, by whom they seem generally to have been hated and dispised. Coronado met the Tonkawa, whom he called the Querecho. They were attached to the Spanish missions in Texas for a time during the eighteenth century. They were driven out of Southern Texas because the white settlers found them to be troublesome neighbors. For a time they lived on the Brazos and, in 1859, they moved to the Washita, settling near Anadarko, where they remained after the Wichita, Caddo and other tribes fled to the North at the outbreak of the Civil War. Here they were attacked by a force of Delaware, Shawnee, Caddo and other Indians on the night of October 25, 1862, and nearly half of their number were killed. They then took refuge under the protection of the Confederate authorities in Texas, where they remained until after the War. The Tonkawa subsequently took service as scouts with the regular army, living most of the time near Fort Griffin, on the Brazos River, until 1884, when they were given a small reservation in the Cherokee Strip in Northern Oklahoma. There are only about fifty Tonkawa surviving, including a few Lipan.

The Eucheean Tribe.

Euchee.—A tribe of distinct linguistic stock, living in South Carolina, Georgia and Florida at the time of the discovery and early settlement of the Colonies on the Atlantic Coast. They gradually retired toward the interior before the advance of the whites, reach-

ing Alabama about 1730. There they became a part of the Muscogee, or Creek Confederacy. Eventually the Euchee were incorporated as a part of the Creek Nation, and as such they migrated to the Indian Territory with the Creek. The Euchee still preserve their own tribal identity. There are about six hundred Euchee living in that part of Oklahoma which was formerly known as the Creek Nation.

Indians in the Military Service During the Civil War

In all there were some twenty military organizations affected among the Indian tribes of the Indian Territory for service with the Confederate Army. The following list of such organizations was compiled in the office of the Adjutant General of the U. S. Army:

1st Cherokee Cavalry Battalion, Maj. Benj. W. Meyer; 1st Cherokee Cavalry Battalion, Maj. J. M. Bryan; 1st Cherokee Mounted Rifles (also called the 2d—see Drew's Cherokee Mounted Rifles); 1st Cherokee Mounted Rifles, Col. Stand Watie; 1st Chickasaw Cavalry Battalion, Lieut. Col. Joseph D. Harris; 1st Chickasaw Cavalry Regiment, Col. Wm. L. Hunter; 1st Choctaw Cavalry Battalion (afterwards the 1st Choctaw War Regiment), Lieut. Col. Franceway Battice; 1st Choctaw Battalion (afterward 3d Choctaw Regiment), Lieut. Col. Jackson McCurtain; 1st Choctaw and Chickasaw Mounted Rifles, Col. Douglas H. Cooper; 1st Choctaw Cavalry War Regiment (in 1864 known as the 2d Choctaw Regiment), Col. Simpson N. Folsom; 1st Choctaw Cavalry Regiment, Col. Sampson Folsom; 1st Seminole Cavalry Battalion (afterward known as 1st Seminole Regiment), Lieut. Col. John Jumper; 1st Creek Cavalry Battalion, Lieut. Col. Chilly McIntosh; 1st Creek Regiment, Col. Daniel N. McIntosh; 2d Cherokee Mounted Rifles, Col. Wm. P. Adair; 2d Creek Regiment, Col. Chilly McIntosh; 3d Choctaw Regiment (formerly 1st Choctaw Battalion), Col. Jackson McCurtain; Cherokee Battalion, Maj. Moses C. Frye, Maj. Joseph A. Scales; Chickasaw Cavalry Battalion, Lieut. Col. Martin Sheco; Drew's Cherokee Mounted Rifles (called 1st and 2d), Col. John Drew; Osage Battalion, Maj. Arm Broke.

Both officers and men of these organizations were members of the various tribes among which they were respectively recruited.

An exception to this general rule was that of Col. Douglas H. Cooper, of the 1st Choctaw and Chickasaw Mounted Rifle Regiment. Colonel Cooper, who was eventually promoted to the grade of Brigadier General, was a white man, who had been U. S. Indian Agent for the Choctaw and Chickasaw tribes at the outbreak of the war. In all, it is probable that the total number of Indians engaged in the war on the Confederate side was somewhere between 6,000 and 7,000.

The Indians who were in the service of the Union Army during the war were organized into three regiments known respectively as the 1st, 2d and 3d Regiments of the Indian Home Guards. They were recruited principally in the Cherokee, Creek and Seminole Nations, though other tribes were represented, and there were a few Indians from the Indian Territory who enlisted with Kansas regiments. The 1st Regiment, Indian Home Guards, was composed principally of members of the Creek Nation, and its aggregate strength was sixty-four officers and 1784 enlisted men. The 2d Regiment, Indian Home Guards, consisted mainly of Cherokee and Osage Indians, its total force having been sixty-six officers and 1835 enlisted men. The 3d Regiment, Indian Home Guards, was recruited mostly among the Cherokee and Creek, and its complete enrollment was fifty-two officers and 1437 enlisted men. Possibly two-thirds of the officers of these regiments were white men. There is no record of the tribal military organizations which supported the cause of the Union. The total number of Indians of the tribes then residing in the Indian Territory who served in the Union Army probably did not exceed 6,000.

The three regiments of Indian Home Guards, which composed a brigade in the Union Army, participated in twenty-eight battles, besides many lesser skirmishes, and it is probable that the Indians in the Confederate service took part in a greater number of battles, as some of them were organized and placed in the field much earlier in the war. The total number of deaths among the Indians in the military service on both sides, including those killed in action and those who died from wounds and disease, was over 1000.

EDUCATION IN OKLAHOMA.

The history of education in Oklahoma begins with the establishment of the first mission and school for the Osage Indians (known as the Union Mission) on the Neosho or Grand River in 1822, by the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions. This mission and school was located a short distance north of where Fort Gibson was afterwards established, and was not only the first in Oklahoma but also the first among the Osage Indians.

When the tribes of the South began to migrate to their new reservations, they were accompanied by the missionaries and teachers who had been laboring among them in their old homes east of the Mississippi. New missions, schools and churches were soon established. One of the most important of these institutions was the mission and seminary at Parkhill, in the Cherokee Nation. A printing and publishing establishment—the first in Oklahoma—was maintained at Parkhill. Other missions and schools were maintained at Dwight, Harmony and Fairfield.

The Choctaw also began to evince an interest in education at an early date, many of their youth being sent to Kentucky, where a school was maintained especially for them. After their removal to the West, the Choctaw Nation established a number of academies which were operated by the mission teachers, the expense of conducting them being divided, a part being borne by the tribal treasury and a part by the missionary societies. The Choctaw language, which had been reduced to writing, so that books were printed in it in Roman characters, was taught in most of the schools, as well as English. Such academies were maintained at Fort Coffee, Wheellock, Spencer, New Hope, Chuahla, Armstrong and several other points. These schools were operated under the immediate management of the missionary societies of the Baptist, Methodist and Presbyterian churches.

The Creek and Chickasaw were much slower in their decision to encourage education among their people, both tribes making appropriations for the establishment of manual training schools in

1848. One of the first Creek schools was established at Tullahassee, north of the Arkansas and west of the Verdigris. The first school established for the Chickasaw was the Wapanucka Academy.

The mission press at Parkhill in the Cherokee Nation was most active. Besides tracts, hymns, catechisms and portions of the Bible, almanacs and numerous school books, such as primers, readers, spellers and arithmetics were printed in the Cherokee, Choctaw and Creek languages. Rev. S. A. Worcester, who had been a missionary among the Cherokee since 1820, and who had suffered imprisonment in the Georgia penitentiary because of his conscientious stand in their behalf when they were subjected to persecuting laws, was in charge at Parkhill. A printing office was set up at Tahlequah when the Cherokee Advocate was established. There was also a printing office at the Dwight mission and one at the Baptist mission in the Going Snake district of the Cherokee Nation. Both of these offices printed books and pamphlets in the Cherokee, Creek and Choctaw languages.

In 1847 the Cherokee Nation appropriated $35,000 for the purpose of erecting two seminaries near Tahlequah, one for male students and one for females. At that time the Cherokee Nation maintained twenty-two primary schools, in only one of which was the Cherokee language taught or used. The Cherokee people had a Bible Society, which was organized in 1841. The national seminaries of the Cherokee were formally opened for the reception of students in 1851, and their first classes were graduated four years later.

The Civil War utterly destroyed the educational systems of the Five Civilized Tribes, as it did all other institutions of civilization in the Indian Territory. The close of the War found most of the school buildings destroyed, the tribes impoverished and conditions generally demoralized. One of the first tasks undertaken following the re-organization of the tribal governments after the new treaties were negotiated with the United States was the re-establishment of the tribal schools. The salaries paid to teachers were often small, and the best talent was not always available, but considering all other conditions, the tribal school systems were very creditable.

The missionary societies of several religious denominations, notably the Baptist, Methodist Episcopal (South) and Presbyterian, took an active interest in education among the Five Civilized Tribes when conditions became settled during the decade which followed the close of the Civil War, the Presbyterians succeeding to the work formerly carried on by the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions. One of the leaders in the educational revival of that period was Rev. Allen Wright, a full blood Choctaw. He was

a man of strong character and splendid ability, which fortunately was developed by a finished education. His ability and leadership gave him a strong hold on his people, whom he represented as a treaty commissioner at Washington in 1866. It is believed that it was he who first suggested the adoption of the name Oklahoma for the Indian commonwealth or territory which it was proposed to organize under the terms of the treaties signed at Washington by the representatives of the several tribes at that time. Among the other educational leaders of that period were Rev. S. A. Robertson and his wife, who had charge of the Presbyterian mission and school at Tullahassee, in the Creek Nation, before the War. Mrs. Robertson (who was a daughter of Rev. and Mrs. S. A. Worcester) was born in Georgia, where her parents were missionaries among the Cherokee before their migration. She had the distinction of being the first woman upon whom the degree of doctor of philosophy was conferred, an honor which was bestowed in recognition of her successful labors in translating parts of the Bible into the Creek language.

JOHN H. SEGER

The settlement of other Indian tribes on the lands lying west of the reservations of the Five Civilized Tribes, which took place between 1867 and 1872, led to the establishment of mission schools and Government Indian schools at a number of tribal agencies. One of the most extensive enterprises of this character was the institution of the Sacred Heart College, by Roman Catholic missionaries, in the southern part of Pottawatomie county. Other mission schools were established among the tribes of Western Oklahoma by the Baptist, Mennonite, Methodist (South), Friends (Quakers), and Episcopal missionaries. The Government endeavored, as far as possible, to establish schools for the children of the Indians of the Great Plains tribes as soon as they could be induced to settle down on their reservations. One of the most unique incidents in the educational history of Oklahoma is that of Thomas C. Battey, the Quaker teacher who labored among the Kiowa (see footnote, page 129). Another man whose work as a teacher among the Indians will live in the hearts of his red friends long after he is gone, is John H. Seger, whose field of effort has been among the Cheyenne and Arapaho. Mr. Seger came to Oklahoma in 1872 as an employe of the Cheyenne and

Arapaho agency. He had neither the education, training nor experience which is ordinarily expected or required of a teacher, and he had nothing to do with the agency school at Darlington until he had been there two years. Then, in 1874, when the last war with the tribes of Western Oklahoma broke out, the teachers employed at the agency school deserted their posts and fled for their lives. The sight of the Indian children who were thus left without anyone to care for them touched the sympathetic heart of Mr. Seger and he took charge of the school without any official assignment. In recognition of his bravery and fidelity, he was given a permanent position as superintendent of the school. He held the place for five years, during which time it greatly increased in attendance and influence. He was then transferred to the more difficult task of seeking to interest adult Indians in farming and earning their own living. In 1886, during the administration of Capt. Jesse M. Lee, as U. S. Indian agent, Mr. Seger took 500 blanket Indians to a point fifty miles distant from the agency at Darlington (i. e., at Colony, in what is now Washita county) where he began a successful experiment in civilizing them by putting them to work. The Indians of his colony are now successful farmers. A large Government Indian school, which bears his name, has been built in the settlement. The story of Mr. Seger's life of activity and unselfish devotion is inspiring.

REV. T. F. BREWER

In the establishment of institutions of learning of a higher grade among the Five Civilized Tribes by the various missionary societies, there seemed to be (without any apparent understanding among them) a concentration of effort in the immediate vicinity of the Union Agency, at Muskogee. These schools included Bacone University (Baptist), Henry Kendall College (Presbyterian), Harrell International Institute (Methodist South), and a Catholic college. Rev. Theodore F. Brewer, who is now a member of the faculty of the University of Oklahoma, was president of Harrell Institute from the date of its organization (1881) until 1907. Harrell Institute has been reorganized and is now known as Spalding Female College. Professor Brewer's service in the field of educational effort in the new state, which now covers full thirty

years, has been an eventful one. Even more so has been that of Rev. Dr. Joseph S. Murrow, who was one of the projectors of Bacone University. Dr. Murrow came to the Indian Territory as a missionary of the Baptist church, in 1857. His earlier field of effort was among the Creek people. During a part of the Civil War period he served as agent of the Seminole Indians for the Confederate government. He afterward located at Atoka, in the Choctaw country, where he founded the Baptist Indian Orphan's Home, of which institution he is still in active charge.

REV. J. S. MURROW

When white people began to settle in the Indian Territory, and leased lands of the Indians, the need of schools for their children was very great. The organization of subscription schools was not infrequently resorted to and, in some cases, arrangements were made whereby the children of such tenants could attend the tribal schools by paying tuition. At best, there was no system and results were far from being satisfactory.

When Oklahoma was first settled, in 1889, the organization of a school system was not possible until after the passage of the Organic Act and the organization of the Territorial government. During the year which intervened between the date of settlement and the establishment of the Territorial government, however, subscription schools were maintained in several of the towns. The Organic Act made provision for the establishment of a system of public schools for the Territory of Oklahoma and, in accordance with the terms of the act under which its lands were opened to settlement, sections 16 and 36 of each township were reserved for the benefit of the schools of the state. (See paragraph 241, page 186.)

J. H. LAWHEAD

When the Territorial government was installed, steps were at once taken to organize a public school system under the statute laws of Nebraska, which became effective. Prof. J. H. Law-

head, of Kingfisher, was appointed as Territorial Superintendent of Public Instruction, and county superintendents were appointed for each of the seven counties. Superintendent Lawhead, who had been State Superintendent of Public Instruction in Kansas before he came to Oklahoma, died in office, and was succeeded by Rev. J. H. Parker, of Kingfisher, who held the place till the end of Governor Seay's administration. Mr. Parker was one of the founders of Kingfisher College (Congregational), of which institution he served as president for several years. Rev. E. D. Cameron was appointed Territorial Superintendent at the beginning of Governor Renfrow's term, in 1893, holding the office for four years.

REV. J. H. PARKER

The first Territorial Legislative Assembly enacted laws providing for the early establishment of a university (at Norman), an agricultural and mechanical college (at Stillwater) and a normal school (at Edmond). All of these institutions were organized during the following year. Changes in the administration of the Agricultural and Mechanical College and of the Normal School have been more or less frequent. Dr. David R. Boyd, who was selected as the first president of the University of Oklahoma, continued to fill that post with ability and credit until its re-organization under the state government in 1908.

DR. DAVID R. BOYD

Governor C. M. Barnes appointed Prof. S. N. Hopkins, of El Reno, to the position of Territorial Superintendent. Professor Hopkins filled the position for the full term of four years. During this time the Fourth Legislative Assembly made provision for the establishment of the Northwestern Normal School, at Alva. The conditions under which this took place aroused considerable contention for a time, but the work done by the institution has long since vindicated the wisdom of its establishment.

Oklahoma was a very young commonwealth when the bugle

sounded the call to war in the spring of 1898, but the pulses of some Oklahoma school boys were quickened by its notes. Among those who heard and answered the call was Roy Cashion, of Hennessey, who had graduated from the public schools of that town only the year before. Though but eighteen years old, he volunteered under the first call and was enrolled and mustered into the service as a private in the 1st Regiment of U. S. Volunteer Cavalry, better known since as "Roosevelt's Rough Riders." With that command he went from the rendezvous at San Antonio, Texas, to Tampa, Florida, and thence to the southern coast of Cuba with the army under General Shafter. Beneath that tropic July sun, on the charge up San Juan Hill, Roy Cashion was stricken with a Mauser bullet from the rifle of a Spanish sharp shooter—the first Oklahoma school boy to give his life for his country on foreign soil. Buried by his comrades where he fell, the markings of his grave were lost for a time, and his father made a second trip to Cuba before it was found and identified. After the removal and re-interment of his remains in the sun-kissed soil of his prairie homeland, the people of the community raised a subscription, which was afterward supplemented by a Territorial legislative appropriation, for the purpose of erecting a monument to his memory. This monument was dedicated in the presence of Governor T. B. Ferguson and a large concourse of the patriotic citizens of the Territory.

PROF. S. N. HOPKINS

ROY CASHION

The passage of the Curtis Bill, by Congress, early in 1899, virtually abolished the tribal school systems and provided for the organization of a system of schools for the Five Civilized Tribes under Federal supervision. To the supervision of this important work Prof. John D. Benedict, an Illinois educator of experience and standing, was appointed, with a corps of four assistants. Under Superintendent Benedict's direction the schools of the Indian Territory were radically remodeled and improved. The standard of requirement for teachers was raised and normal institutes were regularly

held at different points in the Territory each year. As far as possible, the facilities afforded by the tribal schools were made available to the children of non-citizens who resided in the Territory. As the various towns and cities were surveyed and incorporated, they were enabled to establish schools. Although each of these was independent and system was out of the question, the federal

ROY CASHION MONUMENT, HENNESSEY

and local authorities co-operated in the maintenance of the best possible standards.

The Seventh Legislative Assembly of Oklahoma made provision for the establishment of the Southwestern Normal School, which was located at Weatherford. It was not opened for the reception of students until two years later. In 1901, Prof. L. W. Baxter, of the Territorial Normal School at Edmond, was appointed Territorial Superintendent, a position which he filled for six years.

Denominational institutions of learning have not been so numerous in Oklahoma as in some of the other western states. Kingfisher College, at Kingfisher, was the first of its class aside from those

which were really founded as missionary enterprises with outside support. It was founded by the Congregational church and has been well supported. Epworth University, at Oklahoma City, was founded and is jointly owned by the conferences of the two branches of the Methodist Episcopal church. It is the largest denominational institution in the state.

SUPT. J. D. BENEDICT

L. W. BAXTER

The last person who filled the office of Territorial Superintendent was J. E. Dyche, of Lawton, who was appointed less than a year before the advent of statehood. The coming of statehood had an important bearing on the educational development of the commonwealth. A matter of prime consideration was the donation of $5,000,000 for the permanent public school fund of the state, which was one of the provisions of the Enabling Act. Then, too, it followed that public schools would be organized through all that part of the state which was formerly included in the reservations of the Five Civilized Tribes.

J. E. DYCHE

Moreover, the disestablishment, not to say discontinuance, of the tribal academies and seminaries was one of the certain results of such changed relations. The status of some of the denominational institutions was also affected. Thus, Henry Kendall College, at Muskogee, was not only reorganized but also relocated, at Tulsa. Rev. Dr. A. Grant Evans, who was born in British India, of missionary parents, and educated in Great Britain, and who has been connected with educational work in what is now Oklahoma for the greater part of a quarter of a century, remained as the head of that institution until he was called to take the presidency of the University of Oklahoma. Dr. Evans has wielded a powerful influence among the people of the Five Civilized Tribes aside from his work as an educator. It was largely due to his insistence that the prohibition of the liquor traffic in that

part of the state to be formed from the reservations of the Five Civilized Tribes was made compulsory by the Enabling Act.

Very early in the history of Oklahoma Territory the question of separate schools for negro children was agitated, with the result that provision was made for such schools. The Fourth Legislative Assembly also made provision for the establishment of an agricultural, normal and literary institute for the higher education of the negro youth. This institution is located at the village of Langston, in Logan county, a few miles east of Guthrie.

REV. A. GRANT EVANS

At the first election for state officers, Rev. E. D. Cameron, who filled the position of Territorial Superintendent from 1893 to 1897, was elected to the office of State Superintendent of Public Instruction, and it thus became his privilege to be a pioneer in another epoch. In the period of reorganization and readjustment to new conditions the educational agencies of the new state have a particular interest to all of its citizens, both old and young.

REV. E. D. CAMERON

It is as yet too soon to write the story of education in Oklahoma as completed, for its history is yet in the making. The broadening and strengthening and perfecting of the common school system, the establishment of consolidated or township schools in the rural districts, and the multiplication of secondary schools for instruction in agriculture and for training in the industrial arts are a few of the improvements which will rapidly follow the assumption of the responsibilities and privileges of the people of an enlightened state.

The Great Seal of Oklahoma

Each of the Five Civilized Tribes had a great seal, which was attached to its official documents just as such seals are used by the public officials of the various states and territories. When the Territory of Oklahoma was organized, the first session of the Legislative Assembly made provision for a great seal, which was in use constantly up to the change from Territorial to State government.

While the Sequoyah Constitutional Convention was in session, at Muskogee, Rev. A. Grant Evans, who was then president of Henry Kendall College, was asked to suggest a design for a seal for the proposed state of Sequoyah. Dr. Evans designed and had carefully drawn a five-pointed star. In the angles of the star were placed the tribal seals of the Five Civilized Tribes. Above the star and between the two upper points was a half-length figure of Sequoyah holding a tablet upon which appeared the words "We are Brothers" in the Cherokee text. In the other spaces between the points of the star were placed forty-five small stars, emblematic of the constellation to which a forty-sixth was to be added.

During the session of the Oklahoma Constitutional Convention, among the members of the committee which was named to design a great seal for the new state was Gabe E. Parker, a Choctaw Indian, a graduate of Spencer Academy (one of the oldest Choctaw schools), and of Henry Kendall College. Mr. Parker wrote to Dr. Evans for suggestions. The result was an adaptation of the design which had been originally suggested for the Sequoyah seal. The position of the star was changed so that one point was turned upward. The five tribal seals were placed in the angles of the star as before, with the seal of the Territory of Oklahoma in the center. This design also admitted of a more symmetrical arrangement of the forty-five stars in five groups in the spaces between the points, putting nine in each group. In the surrounding circle were placed the words, "Great Seal of the State of Oklahoma," and the date, "1907."

GABE E. PARKER

INDEX

PAGE

Abert, Lieut. James J....62
Abolition of Slavery in the Indian Territory....106
Additional Lands Opened to Settlement....187, 188, 192, 202
Adobe Walls, Battle of....132
Agriculture, Aboriginal....5
Alvord, Capt. Henry E....128, 129
Allen, John M....180
Anadarko Indians....79, 97
Anadarko Peace Council....125
Annexation of Texas....61
Apache....49, 65, 111, 112, 114, 125, 231
Apiatan....182
Arapaho....65, 111, 112, 114, 119, 125, 132, 178, 220
Arbuckle, Col. Matthew....32, 68
Arkansas Territory Organized....30
Armstrong Academy....100
Armstrong, Maj. Francis W....44, 46
Arthur, President Chester A....160, 162
Assassination of Ridge and Boudinot....52
Augur, Gen. C. C....113

Baker, Chas. S....180
Barnes, Governor C. M....194, 201
Bates, Capt. John C....157
Battey, Thomas C....129, 258
Baxter, Superintendent L. W....264
Bell, L. B....171
Benedict, Superintendent John D....198, 262
Bent, William W....112
Beveridge, Senator Albert J....204
Big Head....119, 120
Big Tree....127, 128, 129, 131, 132
Birchfield, S. S....153
Black Beaver....80
Black Kettle....114, 115
Blunt, Gen. James G....85, 88, 90, 91
Board of Agriculture....205, 216

PAGE
Boone, Capt. Nathan 42, 57
Bonneville, Col. B. L. E. 71
Boudinot, Col. Elias C. 101, 109, 125, 148
Boudinot, Elias 38, 47, 52, 53
Boudinot, William P. 171
Bonilla 17
Boundaries Surveyed 38, 67
Boundary Dispute Settled 30
Boyd, Dr. David R. 261
Boyd, J. R. 149
Bradford, Maj. William, Expedition of 30
Brewer, Rev. T. F. 259
British Grant, A, Oklahoma Included 18
Brown, John F. 108
Buffalo, Extinction of the 141
Buffalo Good, Protest of 70
Buffalo, Last Surviving Bands of 143
Burke, C. M. 182

Cabeça de Vaca 11-12
Cabell, Gen. William L. 90
Caddo Indians 11, 22, 70, 71, 72, 79, 80, 110, 125, 233
Cahokia 221
Callahan, James Y. 193
Calhoun, Capt. Patrick, Expedition of 65
California, Across Oklahoma to 62
Cameron, Rev. E. D. 261, 265
Camp Radziminski 69, 71
Camp Supply 116, 117, 119
Canadian River, Flood on the 206
Canby, Gen. Edward R. S. 98
Capron, Capt. Allyn K. 197
Captives, White, Release of 120, 123, 130
Carroll, Capt. Henry 157
Carpenter, Chas. C. 149
Carson, Gen. Christopher 112
Carter, B. W. 171
Carter, Charles D. 216
Cashion, Roy 262
Castillo 17
Catlin, George 44
Chapman, Amos 135
Chase, O. G. 170
Checote, Col. Samuel 155, 158

PAGE
Cherokee 28, 35, 38, 39, 47, 49, 50, 52, 54, 56, 61, 64, 78, 79, 83, 84, 86, 89, 98, 106, 125, 153, 177, 189, 237
Cherokee Outlet 39, 49, 153, 154, 160, 189
Cherokee Strip Live Stock Association.....153, 154, 157, 167
Che-sho-how-ka 134
Cheyenne 65, 111, 112, 114, 116, 117, 119, 125 132, 134, 146, 147, 164, 165, 178, 220
Cheyenne, Northern 146
Chickasaw 42, 48, 66, 67, 77, 79, 98, 106, 125, 242
Chiracahua Apache 232
Chisholm, Jesse 105
Chisholm Trail, The 105, 106, 133, 150
Choctaw 35, 39, 40, 48, 76, 79, 93, 98, 99, 106, 244
Chouteau, Col. Auguste P.....49, 54, 55
Chouteau's Trading Post.....55
Chupco, John 108
Chustenahlah, Battle of 83
Chusto Tulasah, Battle of.....82
Cimarron, Territory of 169
Claremore or Clermont 39
Clarke, Sidney 109, 110, 161
Cleveland, President Grover 164, 165, 167, 190
Coal Mine, Opening of the First.....123
Colbert, Winchester 93, 98, 108
Comanche 19, 44, 45, 49, 64, 68, 111, 112, 114, 117, 125, 132, 134, 248
Congressional Delegation, The First.....215
Constitution, Approval of 209
Constitution, Provisions of 209
Constitution, The Adoption of.....209
Constitutional Convention, The.....208
Constitutions, New Tribal 67
Cooper, Douglas H.....82, 83, 84, 85, 86, 88, 89, 91, 96, 98, 108
Cooley, D. N., Commissioner of Indian Affairs.....100, 108
Coronado 12-15
Cosby, Lieut. George B.....71
Couch, William L. 162, 164, 167
Crawford, Gov. Samuel J.....114, 116
Crawford, R. F. 153
Crazy Snake 199
Creek Indians 35, 39, 48, 64, 66, 79, 81, 85, 90, 100, 106, 107, 155, 158, 199, 244
Crocker, Samuel 164
Cross, William M.....205
Cullom, Hon. Shelby M.....109

PAGE
Curtis, Gen. S. R. 83
Curtis Law, The 197
Custer, Gen. George A. 116, 117, 118, 120

Dale, John 170
Dancing Rabbit Creek, Treaty of 40
Darlington, Brinton 131
Darlington Indian Agency 132
Davenport, James S. 216
Dawes' Commission 190
Dawes, Senator Henry L. 190
Davidson, Lieut.-Col. J. W. 134
Day, Lieut. M. W. 163
Delaware Indians 79, 80, 85, 108, 125, 223
Denver, Gen. James W. 84
Dewees, Maj. T. B. 163
Dodge, Col. Henry 45
Dorsey, Senator Stephen W. 147
Drew, Col. John 83
Du Bourgmont, Explorations of 21
Dull Knife 119, 120, 146
Dyche, Superintendent J. E. 264

Educational Development, Sketch of 256
Elijah Sells, Superintendent of Indian Affairs 100, 108
Elliott, Maj. Joel H. 117
Emory, Lieut.-Col. William H. 72, 77
Enabling Act, The 207
Euchee 253
Evans, Rev. Dr. A. Grant 264

Fairchild, Gen. Lucius 177
Fat Bear 119, 120
Federal Supply Train, Capture of 94
Ferguson, Governor Thompson B. 203, 262
Ferris, Scott 216
Fisk, Gen. Clinton B. 158
Flood at Guthrie 194
Flynn, Dennis T. 189, 191, 193, 195, 198, 199, 203
Fort Arbuckle 68, 69, 71, 76, 80, 111, 112, 118
Fort Cobb 72, 76, 80, 111, 112, 118, 127
Fort Coffee 44
Fort Davis 85, 86
Fort Gibson 32, 85, 88, 90, 91, 92, 93, 94, 157
Fort Gibson, Abandonment of 67

PAGE
Fort Holmes 55
Fort McCulloch 84, 93
Fort Reno 136, 157
Fort Scott 94
Fort Sill 118, 121, 126, 128, 131
Fort Smith 91, 92, 94, 100
Fort Smith Established 29
Fort Towson 32, 44, 48, 93
Fort Washita 76, 80, 93
Fort Wayne 85
Forts Gibson and Towson Established 32
Foster, Judge C. G. 160
Frantz, Governor Frank 206, 209
Free Homes Bill, Passage of 198
Freedmen 106
Fremont, Col. John C. 62, 81
Friendly Indians, Proposed Settlement of 107
French Indian Policy 22
Fulton, Elmer L. 216
Fur Trade 54
Furnas, Col. R. W. 84

Gale, Lieut. George H. 150
Gallego, Capt. Juan, Sword of 16
Gano, Gen. Richard M. 93, 94, 95
Ghost Dance, The 182
Gibson, I. T. 134
Gore, Senator Thomas P. 216
Grant, Gen. U. S. 130
Grasshoppers, Scourge of 66
Gray, Stan. W. 171
Grayson, George W. 171
Great Seal of Oklahoma 266
Gregg, Josiah 56
Greer County 192
Grierson, Col. Benjamin H. 118, 122, 126
Guess, George 56

Hamilton, Capt. Louis McLane 117
Hancock, Gen. Winfield S. 113
Harrison, President Benjamin 173, 177, 181, 188, 190
Harkins, George W. 171
Harney, Gen. William S. 100, 112, 114
Hartranft, Gen. John F. 177

PAGE
Harvey, David 185, 186
Haskell, Governor Charles N..... 206, 209, 215
Hatch, Col. Edward 160, 164
Hayes, President Rutherford B..... 146, 149, 150
Heap of Birds 136
Henderson, Senator John B..... 113
Hennessey, Patrick, Death of..... 133
Hindman, Gen. William..... 84
Hinds, Gen. Thomas 39
Honey Springs, Battle of..... 88
Hopkins, Superintendent S. N..... 261
Horse, the Effect of its Coming on Life of the Indians..... 6
Hubbard, David, Superintendent of Indian Affairs..... 78
Huston, Capt. Robert B..... 197

Indian Battle, An..... 65
Indian Lands, Negotiations for Purchase of..... 177, 190
Indian Peace Council 96
Indian Peace Compact, An 96
Indian Race, The 219
Indian Territory, Conditions in at Outbreak of Civil War..... 75
Indian Territory, Establishment of Authorized..... 40
Indian Territory, Proposed Organization of..... 54
Indian Treaties, Making of, Discontinued..... 110
Indians, Dress and Adornment of..... 7-8
Indians, First Known Inhabitants..... 3
Indians in the Military Service..... 254
Indians, Physical Development and Disposition of..... 6
Internal Dissensions 99
Inter-Tribal Councils 168
Inter-Tribal Peace Councils..... 46, 64
Iowa 178, 249
Iowa Reservation, Opening of 187
Iron Shirt 118
Isparhechar 155, 158, 171

Jackson, Gen. Andrew 39-48
Jenkins, Governor William M..... 201, 203
Jerome, Gov. George W..... 177
Johnson, Lieut.-Col. Joseph E..... 67
Jumper, Col. John 93

Kansas, or Kaw 250
Kansas, Removal of Tribes from the East to..... 41

PAGE
Kaskaskia 225
Keaton, James R. 197
Keechi Indians 79, 80, 110, 234
Ketoowha Society 82
Kickapoo Indians 85, 78, 225
Kickapoo Lands, Opening of 192
Kicking Bird 113, 128, 129, 131, 132
Kidd, Meredith H. 19
Kiowa 111, 112, 114, 117, 118, 125, 129, 132, 134, 241
Kiowa and Apache, First Treaty with 49
Kiowa and Comanche, Treaty with 64
Kiowa and Comanche, War with 62
Kiowa, Massacre of by Osage 43
Kiowa-Comanche Reservation, Opening of 202
Kirby-Smith, Gen. Edmund 71, 97, 98
Knox, Thomas W. 113

Languages, Indian 8
Lawhead, Superintendent J. H. 260
Lawton, Lieut. Henry W. 146
Lee, Capt. Jesse M. 259
Lee, Lieut. Fitzhugh 71
Le Flore, Campbell 107, 171
Leavenworth, Col. J. H. 43, 45, 112
Legislative Assembly, First 182
Legislature, The First State 216
Little Chief 146, 147
Little Raven 118, 132
Little Robe 118, 132
Live Stock Quarantine 198, 216
Lodges and Tepees 4
Lone Wolf 118, 128, 132
Long, Maj. Stephen H., Explorations of 31
Louisiana Again a French Province 23
Louisiana Ceded to Spain 23
Louisiana, Colonization of 19
Louisiana Purchased by the United States 23-25

Mallet and La Bruyere, Explorations of 21-22
Mansur, Charles H. 170, 180
Marcos de Nizza 18
Marcy, Capt. R. B. 62, 63, 68, 81
Marquette and LaSalle, Explorations of 18
Matthews, J. Frank 206

PAGE
Matthews, James L. 186
Matthews, Lieut.-Col. A. C. 98
Maxey, Gen. Samuel B. 92, 93, 94
McCoy's Annual Register 41
McCoy, J. G. 186
McCoy, Rev. Isaac 50
McClellan, Lieut. George B. 63
McCulloch, Gen. Ben 77, 78
McGuire, Bird S. 205, 206, 216
McKennon, Archibald S. 190
McKenzie, Col. R. S. 127, 129
McKinley, President William 194
McKnight's Trading Post 55
McIntosh, Col. D. N. 91
McIntosh, Col. James 83
McIntosh, Roly 35
McRae, Thomas C. 191
Medicine Lodge, Treaty of 113
Merritt, Gen. Wesley 111, 149, 165
Miami 110, 226
Miller, Thomas 131
Miles, Col. Nelson A. 111, 135, 165
Military Posts, Evacuated in 1861 76
Mizner, Lieut. Col. J. K. 146
Modoc 242
Moscoso 16
Mow-a-way, Story of 121
Murray, Wm. H. 206, 208
Murphy, Thomas 112, 114, 115
Murrow, Rev. Dr. Joseph D. 260

Neff, Robert A. 199
Neil, Col. Thomas H. 136
New Echota, Treaty of 48
Nez Perce 146
Nineteenth Kansas Cavalry 116, 118
No-Man's-Land 168, 169, 170
Normal School, Southwestern 201
Normal School, The Northwestern 198
Northern Boundary Surveyed 67

Oil and Gas, Discovery of 201
Oklahoma "Colonies" 149
Oklahoma Country, First Proposed Settlement of 148

PAGE
Oklahoma, Mentioned 40
Oklahoma—Proposed as Name by Choctaw 107
Oklahoma "War Chief," The 154, 164, 166
Okmulgee Constitution 124
Oñate 17
Opening Day Proclaimed 173
Organic Act, The 180
Organization of Territory, Attempt at 179
Osage 39, 79, 100, 134, 251
Ottawa 110, 227
Oto and Missouria 252
Outlaws in the Indian Territory 130
Overland Trade 55
Overland Trail, An 63
Owen, Senator Robert L. 216

Page, John 107
Parish, Prof. Edward 128
Parker, Col. E. S. 100, 108
Parker, Cynthia Ann 136
Parker, Gabe E. 266
Parker, Quanah 133, 136
Parker, Rev. J. H. 261
Passage of the Oklahoma Bill 172
Paul, Sam. 171
Pawnee 145, 189, 235
Payne Appeals to Courts 153, 159
Payne, Capt. David L. 149, 150, 152, 153, 154, 157, 159, 160
Pea Ridge, Battle of 83
Peace Conditions 100
Peace Councils 46, 64, 96, 100, 125, 127
Peace Medals 49
Pegg, Capt. Thomas 87
Peoria 227
Peoria, Kaskasia, Wea and Piankeshaw Indians 110
Perkins, Bishop W. 180
Peters, Samuel R. 180
Phillips, Col. William A. 85, 86, 89, 90, 93
Phoenix, The Cherokee 38
Pike, Capt. Z. M. 27
Pike, Gen. Albert 43, 78, 81, 83, 84
Pin Indians 82
Pitchlynn, Peter P. 98, 99, 101, 107, 108
Poison Spring, Battle of 93, 94

PAGE
Ponca 145, 252
Pontotoc, Treaty with Chickasaw at.....42
Porter, Gen. Pleasant 152, 156
Pottawatomie 109, 178, 187, 228
Pottawatomie Reservation, Opening of.....187
Pratt, Capt. R. H.....137
Price, Gen. Sterling 83
Prior, Capt. Nathan 30-32
Prohibition 210
Proposed Indian Commonwealth 107
Proposed Organization of Oklahoma Territory.....109
Prosperity of Immigrant Tribes.....54
Plumb, Senator Preston B.....171
Public Building Bill, The.....200

Quahada Comanche 121, 129, 131, 136
Quaker Indian Agents 131
Quapaw Indians 79, 100, 110, 252
Quay, Senator Matthew S.....204

Race for Claims, The.....174
Railway Construction 123, 167, 196
Railway Construction, Assented to.....107
Ranchmen as Pioneers 145
Randall, Maj. George M.....152
Range Cattle Industry, The.....144
Rector, Elias 70
Rector, Gov. Henry M.....77
Religious Beliefs of the Indians.....10
Renfrow, Governor William C.....189
Reynolds, Milton W. 101, 113, 183
Ridge, Major 47, 52
Riley, James 107
Rivalry of Spanish and French.....20
Robertson, Rev. and Mrs. S. A.....258
Robinson, Capt. T. B.....151
Ross, Capt. L. S.....72, 137
Ross, John 47, 52, 79, 84, 86, 87
Ross, William P. 124

Sad Chapter, A 51
Salt Plains, Visited and Explored.....29, 57
Sanborn, John B. 112, 113
Sanders, George 171

PAGE
Santa Fe Trail 36, 62
Satank 127, 128
Satanta 118, 125, 126, 127, 128, 129, 131, 132, 138, 142
Sauk and Fox 65, 178, 229
Sauk and Fox Reservation, Opening of 187
Sayre, Hon. W. G 177
School Lands, The 186
Schurtz, Gen. Carl 149
Scott, Gen. Winfield 50
Senators, Election of the First 216
Seneca Indians 79, 100, 110, 240
Sears, T. C. 148
Seay, Governor A. J 188
Seger, John H. 258
Seminole 42, 66, 79, 100, 106, 125, 247
Sequoyah 56
Sequoyah Constitutional Convention 206
Shawnee Indians 85, 100, 104, 110, 125, 178, 229
Sheridan, Gen. P. H 113, 115, 116, 118, 119, 165
Sherman, Gen. William T 113, 126
Sibley, George C., Visits the Salt Plains 29
Simpson, Lieut. J. H 63
Slavery, Abolition of, in Cherokee Nation 87, 106
Slavery in the Indian Territory 75
Smith, E. P. 132
Snyder, Tornado at 206
"Sooners," The 174
Spaniards in Wichita Mounttains 17, 22
Spanish War 196
Sparks, Capt. Richard, Red River Expedition 27
Spiechee War, The 155
Springer, William M 161, 170, 180
Stand Watie 53, 84, 86, 87, 89, 94, 95
Stanley, Henry M. 113
State Government, Inauguration of 215
Statehood Bills 191, 193, 203, 204, 206, 207
Statehood Conventions 204, 205
Steamboat, Federal Supply, Capture of 94
Steele, Gen. Frederick 93
Steele, Gen. William 88, 90, 92
Steele, Governor George W 181, 184, 188
Steele, James 112
Stockmen Remove Herds from Cheyenne Reservation 165

PAGE
Stokes, Gov. Montfort....44, 46, 49
Stone Calf....136
St. Denis, Du Tissenet and La Harpe, Explorations of....19
Sumner, Lieut. Col. E. V....167

Tabananika....129
Tachee, or "Dutch"....39
Tappan, Samuel F....113
Tatum, Lawrie....123, 130, 131
Tawakony Indians....79, 80, 110, 237
Taylor, Nathaniel G....113
Teller, Senator Henry M....154
Territorial Capital, Attempt to Change....184
Territorial Government Installed....181
Territory of Cimarron....169
Terry, Gen. Alfred H....113
Texas Cattle Trade, The....143
Texas Cession, The....62
Tonkawa Indians....79, 85, 189, 253
Tornado at Chandler....194
Traders Attacked by Indians....43
Traditions, Indian....10
Travis, O. H....189
Treaties, Confederate, with Indian Tribes....79
Tribes and Bands, Division of Indians into....8
Tribal Constitution and Laws....56, 67
Tufts, John Q....156

Unassigned Lands, The....147
Union Mission Established....32

Van Dorn, Maj. Earl....68, 71, 83
Van Horn, Hon. R. T....109
Van Wyck, Senator C. H....161

Waco Indians....79, 80, 110, 237
Wade, Alfred....107
Walker, Col. Tandy....93, 125
War on the Plains....111
Ward, N. H....189
Washington Irving, Visit of to Oklahoma....43
Washita, Battle of the....116
Wea and Piankeshaw....231
Weapons of War and the Chase....5
Weaver, James B....161, 170

PAGE
Webber's Falls, Fight at....89
Weir, Col. William....84
Wheeler, Gen. Joseph....191
Whirlwind....65, 132
White Shield....132
Whittlesey, Gen. E....158
Wichita-Caddo Reservation, Opening of....202
Wichita Indians....14, 45, 68, 70, 79, 80, 100, 110, 125, 235
Wilkinson, Lieut. James B., Descends the Arkansas....27
Williams, Col. J. M....95
Wilson, Alfred M....177
Winter Campaign, A....134
Wool, Gen. John E....52
Worcester, Rev. S. A....257
Wright, Allen....107
Wyandotte Indians....100, 110, 239
Wynkoop, Maj. E. W....115

Yellow Bear....118
Yohola, Hu-pui-hilth....81, 82
Young, Col. W. C....76

1 — 16 ft 4½ In Crown Mold
2 ft Picture Mold
4 " 3 In Crown Mold

2 Windows 30 Wide 24 High 6 Lights 10x12
" " 24W 26H 6-13x8½
" " 24 x 20 6 Lt 8x10
" " 30X26 - 6L 13X10
Back 36-24 8 Light Tops
30X26 8 SASH 8LT. 13X7½ TOP
TOPS 36X26 8LT. 13X8½ GLAZED
26X26 6 LT. 8X13 TOP GLAZED
WIND 28X32 2LT. GLAZED
WIND 24X24 2LT GLAZED
TOPS 24X24 GLAZED
WIND 26X26 2LT GLAZED
WIND 26X20 2LT GLAZED
BOTM 10X28 GLAZED

WIND OPEN 30X26
WIND OPEN 20X28
BOTM OPEN 30X26

RETAIL PRICE - - - - 65 CENTS
EXCHANGE PRICE - - 32 "

THE PRICE MARKED HEREON IS FIXED BY THE STATE AND ANY DEVIATION THEREFROM SHOULD BE REPORTED TO THE STATE SUPERINTENDENT OF PUBLIC INSTRUCTION